



монитор / С













Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2018 with funding from  
Wellcome Library

<https://archive.org/details/b30414507>









86569

T H E  
H I S T O R Y of a V O Y A G E  
T O T H E  
Malouine (or Falkland) Islands,

Made in 1763 and 1764,

Under the Command of M. de BOUGAINVILLE,  
in Order to form a Settlement there :

A N D O F  
Two Voyages to the S T R E I G H T S of M A G E L L A N ,  
W I T H A N  
Account of the P A T A G O N I A N S .

Translated from Dom PERNETY's HISTORICAL JOURNAL,  
written in French.

---

ILLUSTRATED WITH COPPER-PLATES.

---

THE SECOND EDITION.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for WILLIAM GOLDSMITH, Number 24, PATER-NOSTER  
Row ; and DAVID STEEL, Number 1, UNION-Row, the  
Lower-End of the MINORIES, LITTLE TOWER-HILL.

M.DCC.LXXIII.

1881

Journal of the Royal Society of Medicine

1881

(Vol. 1, Part 1, No. 1) - 1881

Published for the Society by  
J. & A. Churchill, 11, New Street, London, E.C. 4

Subscription price, 5s. per annum in advance

Single copies, 1s. 6d. each

Advertisements, 6s. per line per week

Printed and Published by J. & A. Churchill, 11, New Street, London, E.C. 4

1881



1881

1881

1881



T H E  
A U T H O R ' s  
P R E F A C E.

**T**H E discovery and knowledge of the Malouine Islands has been looked upon as an object of so much importance, that the English, having been informed of the expedition we made there in 1764, thought it necessary to establish themselves in those islands, notwithstanding that we had already taken possession of them in the name of the crown of France. In preparing for this voyage, which excited the attention of all Europe, they took extraordinary precautions. Commodore Byron was employed on this expedition with two ships, the Dolphin and the Tamer frigate, under his command. The Florida was afterwards dispatched to carry them provisions of all kinds.

We had taken possession of these islands in the beginning of April, before the Dolphin was off the stocks, and we quitted them the 8th of the same month on our return to France, where we landed the 26th of June. The English did not sail till some days after. On the 4th of December they left Port Desire, and took their course towards the South of the supposed Pepys's Island, at 48 degrees South latitude, where they made several unsuccessful attempts for the discovery of that island. They were then obliged, as they observe p. 69. of the Voyage round the world in 1764 and 1765 on board the Dolphin, to abandon that research, being well persuaded of the impossibility of finding this supposed island.

The 22d of the same month (December) being in the Straights of Magellan, five leagues distance from Terra del Fuego, they observed a smoke rising in several places on the opposite coast, which is that of Patagonia. They steered towards it, and casting

anchor at about a mile from shore, saw distinctly men on horseback, who beckoned to them.

On approaching the coast there appeared manifest signs of fear in the countenances of those, who were going on shore in the boat, when they perceived at the water side men of a prodigious stature. The Commodore, animated with the idea of making a discovery relative to these Patagonians, the question of whose existence had for a long time furnished matter of conversation in England, was the first who leaped on shore, and was followed by his officers and seamen well armed, whom he drew up in a posture of defence. The savages, to the number of about 200, immediately ran up to them, looking at them with an air of the greatest surprize, and smiling at the disproportion in size between the English and themselves.

The Commodore made signs to them to sit down, which they complied with; and he put about their necks collars of enamelled beads, and ribbands, giving to each of them some such trifling ornament. Their size is so extraordinary, that even sitting they were almost as high as the Commodore when he stood upright. (p. 77.)

Their middle stature seemed to be about eight feet, and the highest above nine \*. The English did not use any measure to ascertain this; but we have reason, say they, to believe, the account we give rather falls short of, than exceeds, the truth. (p. 78.) The size of the women is as surprizing as that of the men, and the children are in the same proportions. The women wore necklaces and bracelets. (p. 79.) Their cloaths were made of the skins of Peruvian sheep, which covered their shoulders, and came down as far as their knees. The greatest part of them were on horseback, before we landed; but they alighted, and left their horses at some distance. The horses have the appearance of being

\* The Commodore is said, in the preface to the same Account, (p. 61.) to be six feet high. It must be remembered, that the English foot is near an inch less than the French standard foot.



ing very swift, but their height is not in proportion to that of their riders, and they seemed besides to be in but indifferent condition. (p. 85.) They appeared to be of a mild and friendly disposition. (p. 83.)

Among the English was Lieutenant Cummins, whom the Patagonians seemed to regard with particular satisfaction, on account of his height, which was not less than six feet ten inches. Some of them clapped him on the back; but though this was intended only as a mark of their kindness, their hands fell so heavy upon him, that he staggered under the weight of them.

On the 23d of the same month, the English having advanced farther into the Straights discovered several savages, on the Island of Saint Elizabeth, who made signs to them to come on shore. Both the men and women were of middling stature, and well shaped. Their hair was black; their skin, which is naturally of an olive colour, appeared red, because they paint their bodies with a composition of reddish earth mixed with grease. They are clothed with the skins of sea-calves, otters, or Peruvian sheep, sewed together, so as to make one piece of about four feet and one half square. They wear caps made of the skins of birds with the feathers, and have also skins on their feet, which serve them instead of shoes. Some of the women had girdles also made of skins; but none of them wore caps; they were only distinguished by a necklace of shells. (p. 92.)

After having provided themselves with wood and water at Port *Famine*, the English sailed from thence the 5th of January 1765, and steering eastward, cleared the Straights, and saw land the 13th of the same month. The next day they entered a very commodious bay, within which were several small ones, and different harbours: to the third of these they gave the name of Port Egmont. The entrance to this bay is by the North; it is half a mile in width, and has from seven to thirteen fathom depth on a muddy bottom. (p. 121).

The 23d of January, the Commodore took possession of all these islands in the name of the King of Great Britain, and left them the 27th, without having established any settlement there. These islands are situated in 51 degrees 21 minutes South latitude, and 66 degrees ten minutes West longitude. (p. 134). From hence they returned, coasting along to the Straights of Magellan.

It will appear by the particulars of this English account, and by those of my Journal, that we were acquainted with the Malouine Islands, and had formed a settlement there, near a twelvemonth before the two ships under the command of Mr. Byron had even discovered them. At the time even when these two vessels arrived there, Monf. de Bougainville was then returned; and having seen them from the port where he lay at anchor, set sail for the Straights of Magellan, where he met with them, as will be seen at the end of my Journal.

I have entered into the detail of this English expedition to the Malouines in order to convince the public of the incontestable right of the crown of France to the possession of them, in opposition to the injurious pretensions of the English.

I have also given a sketch of the account, which one of the officers of Mr. Byron's ship has printed concerning the giants of Patagonia, that the Reader might compare it with what is said of them in the extracts from the journals of the French Captains, who have seen and made a longer stay with these Patagonians than the English have. Such a comparison will prove to those who are incredulous, or who have too much vanity to suffer themselves to appear ignorant of what has never come to their knowledge, or, from the same principle, make a point of denying every thing they have not seen, that there exists, nevertheless, a race of men, the bulk and enormity of whose size may teach these unbelieving, vain, and self-conceited persons, to reduce their magnificent pretensions, and be contented to consider themselves as not the smallest among the race of dwarfs.

The



The Streights of Magellan were little known. The accounts we had of it till this time, though many in number, were not to be depended upon; the observations were either deficient in exactness or in perspicuity. This has determined me to give those of our two French Captains, and a chart of the Streights, corrected according to their observations.

It may be conjectured, and indeed with great appearance of probability, that the Malouine Islands formerly made a part of Patagonia and Terra del Fuego, and that they were separated from them by violent earthquakes, which opened a passage for the sea through a cleft caused by the eruption, and formed in time the channel, by which those islands are divided from the continent. This conjecture is the more reasonable, as the Terra del Fuego took its name from the volcanos, which were supposed to have been seen there, and as at some distance from that part of the Malouine Islands, where we have made our settlement, the hills and vallies shew clearly, by the disorder of the beds of free stone, and the irregular heaps in which they lie, that this confusion is the effect of earthquakes. See what is said on this subject in my journal.

But what will astonish the Reader is, that a country so extensive as the Malouines should neither be inhabited by men, nor by any of those quadrupeds, which are commonly met with among the Patagonians; and that the small spider with long legs, which is called in France *Faucheuse*, and the little brown cricket called *Cri-cri*, which is also found in chimneys, are the only two insects we saw there. It is less wonderful, that we should not meet with any of the reptile species, as travellers assure us, that there are none to be found in the territory of Chily, which lies to the West of Patagonia, in the same parallel with the Malouine Islands.

Another motive, which induces me to believe, that the Malouines were originally joined to Patagonia, is, that there are no trees on them, and that the whole coast to the East of the Patagonians, and of Terra del Fuego, is without trees, to about 25 leagues

leagues up the country. At that distance some trees begin to appear, but from thence to the sea side there is nothing to be found but shrubs and heath. It is the same on the Malouines. The discoveries which the English, who have settled more to the West, may make on that side, will give us more light into these particulars. The Spaniards, who have succeeded my countrymen in the Eastern settlement will inform us with regard to those parts.

The exactness of the plans and charts, as well as that of the figures of animals in the plates of my Journal, may be depended upon. The chart I give of the Rio de la Plata is the more interesting as it was taken with the utmost accuracy, and as it is the only one of that river, the navigation of which is so dangerous.



## I N T R O D U C T I O N.

**A**FTER the peace was concluded by a cession of all Canada on the part of France to England, M. de Bougainville, Knight of St. Louis, and Colonel of infantry, conceived the design of indemnifying France for this loss, if possible, by a discovery of the southern continent, and of those large islands, which lie in the way to it. A perusal of admiral Anson's voyage round the world fixed his ideas for finding the Malouine Islands, and determined him to make them the first object of his expedition, and to form a settlement there. He communicated his project to the ministry, who approved it. To carry it therefore into execution, M. de Bougainville caused a frigate and a sloop to be built at St. Malo at his own expence, under the directions of the Sieurs Guyot du Clos and Chenart de la Gyraudais, who were to have the command of them under him. But being desirous to make the execution of his design as advantageous as possible, and imagining that I might be of service to him in that respect, he proposed to me, just before he quitted Paris, to undertake the voyage with him. A few days after, I received the King's orders in a letter from the Duke de Choiseul, minister for the marine department, to embark with M. de Bougainville. I made my dispositions immediately for the voyage, and set off with him for St. Malo.

Those, who are acquainted with the situation of the Malouine Islands, will applaud the project of M. de Bougainville; but few people have heard of those islands, because they were almost unknown. Some navigators had seen them, but, I think, I may assert, that no one before ourselves had ever landed there, at least in the part where we did. For this reason it will be proper to give some idea of the discovery of them from the accounts given by authors of established reputation.

Frezier, in his relation *du Voyage de la Mer du Sud*, printed in 4to, Paris 1716, p. 264, expresses himself thus: "If in this chart I have suppressed some supposed countries, I have added others which are real, in the latitude of 51 degrees, and to which I have given the name of *new Islands*; because they have been discovered since the year 1700, the greatest part of them by the ships of St. Malo. I have placed them according to the reports of the Maurepas and St. Louis, ships belonging to the India Company, which had a near view of them, and the latter even took in fresh water there from a pond, which I have marked near Port St. Louis. The water here was reddish and somewhat insipid, in other respects good for the sea. Both these vessels passed them in different parts, but the one which kept closest along the coast was the St. John Baptist, commanded by Doublet of Havre, who attempted to pass through an opening he saw towards the middle of them; but perceiving several small islands just rising to the surface of the water, he thought proper to tack about. This cluster of islands is the same which was discovered by Fouquet of St. Malo, and to which he gave the name of Anican, his owner. The routs I have traced will shew the bearing of these lands from the Straights of Le Maire, in her passage from which the St. John Baptist saw them, and from Statenland, which the two other ships had had a prospect of before they found it.

The northern part of these lands, which is here called the *Coasts of the Assumption*, was discovered the 16th of July 1708, by Poré of St. Malo \*, who named it after the ship he sailed in. It was thought to be a new land, at the distance of about a hundred leagues east of the new islands I am speaking of; but I have

\* It appears that Poré was not acquainted with the situation of the coasts of the Patagonians, nor that of the new or Malouine Islands, or that he was mistaken in his point. These islands are in fact no more than 90 or 100 leagues distant from the Straights of Magellan; how then could they be at the distance of 100 leagues West of the coast of the Assumption, as it is called by Poré? If he had known the situation of the Malouine Islands, he would have seen clearly by the latitude and longitude of the coast he ran along, that it could be no other than the coast of those islands.



have made no scruple of joining it with them, having convincing reasons to justify my opinion.

The first is, that the latitudes observed on the North and South of these islands, and the bearing of the known parts answer perfectly to the same point of reunion on the East side without leaving any space between them. The second, that there is no reason to imagine this coast lies eastward of the isles of Anican. For M. Gobien of the St. John, who was pleased to communicate to me an extract of his journal, supposes it to lie South of the river Plata\*; which account, taken strictly, will not admit of its being at a greater distance than two or three degrees eastward, that is to say, five and twenty or thirty leagues†. But the difference of computations is always a mark of uncertainty. The first time they saw this coast on their passage from Saint Catherine's to the Brasils, they reckoned it at 329 degrees; the second, in passing from the river Plata, where contrary winds obliged them to put in, after having tried to pass Cape Horn: they supposed it at 322 degrees, and according to some 324; following the charts of Peter Goos, the errors of which we have taken notice of, so that little regard ought to be paid to them. However, as they relied upon them, they thought themselves at a great distance from the Continent, and reckoning that they were too far eastward, ran three hundred leagues too far to West in the South Sea, insomuch that they imagined themselves on the coast of Guinea, when they landed at Ylo. But the third and convincing

\* The supposition of M. Gobien, of the St. John, is false, in placing this coast of Assumption South of the river Plata. We were on shore there, as he was, and in the same place, according to Frezier's chart, and found it by our computation about 64 degrees and a half W. longitude from the meridian of Paris, and the mouth of the river Plata  $56^{\circ} 30'$ ; which carries that part of the coast where M. Gobien and we landed eight degrees farther S. W. and answers nearly to the mistake attributed by the author of Admiral Anson's Voyage (p. 78.) to Frezier's chart in regard to the situation of the coast of Patagonia.

† If we place the coast of the Assumption three degrees farther to the West, it will be more conformable to our estimation, which makes our landing place four degrees, or thereabouts, more to West than it would be according to Frezier's chart, which is formed on the extract M. Gobien furnished him with from his own journal.



convincing argument is, that we ought to pass to windward of this new land according to the longitude it was placed in, in the manuscript chart; and that it is morally impossible any ship could pass without seeing it, it being about 50 leagues in length from E. S. E. to W. N. W. No doubt therefore remains, that this was the northern part of the new islands, the western part of which will be discovered in time, but is yet unknown.

These islands are certainly the same, which were discovered by Sir Richard Hawkins in 1593, to the east of the uninhabited coast, and in 50 degrees latitude. He was thrown by a storm on an unknown land: he ran along the coast about sixty leagues, and saw fires, from whence he concluded the place was inhabited\*.

Hitherto these lands have been called Sebald's Islands, it being supposed that the three which go under this name in the charts were situated there at pleasure, for want of a proper knowledge of them. But the ship *L'Incarnation*, commanded by the Sieur Brignon of St. Malo, took a near view of them in fine weather in the year 1711, on her departure from Rio Janeiro. They are in fact three small islands † of about half a league in length, ranged

\* I do not know whether the islands, which Sir Richard Hawkins saw in 1593, to the East of the desert coast of Patagonia, in 50 degrees S. latitude, are the northern part of the new or Malouine Islands. We ran sixty degrees at least along the coast, as well as he, and saw no fire, or appearance of habitation, though we were very often at no greater distance than that of half a league or a league.

† At our landing we discovered three islands about half a league in length, pretty high, and forming a kind of triangle, agreeable to the account of Sebald's Islands. This resemblance in position and figure made us take them at first for Sebald's Islands; but we discovered near them several small flat islands, almost even with the surface of the water, of which no mention is made in the Sieur Brignon's journals, nor in those of other people, who speak of Sebald's Islands. A few hours after, having discovered other eminences, one behind another, we judged that these three islands were not Sebald's Islands, but some of the Malouines, which stand out before the principal one, and we found reason to confirm ourselves in this opinion. If these three islands were really Sebald's Islands, they would be about two leagues distance from land, or the principal island, and not seven or eight, as Frezier says. See the chart of our route along the coast. However in the two voyages of the *Eagle* and the *Star Pink*, which have taken a later view of these three islands in their passage from the Malouines to the Straits of Magellan, the *Eagle* in 1765, and the *Eagle* with the *Star* in 1766; these vessels found no more islands than those three, and have since looked upon them to be Sebald's Islands.

ranged in a triangular form, as they are represented in the charts. They passed at the distance of three or four leagues from them, and saw no land, though the weather was very fine, which is a proof that they are separated from the new islands by at least seven or eight leagues.

In the memorial presented to the *Compagnie des Indes* by the Sieur de Lozier Bouvet in the year 1735, soliciting their assistance in furnishing him the means of observing the countries discovered by Gonneville, he reports, among other advantages of the establishment they might form there after that observation, the opportunities of fixing an immediate commerce with the Spaniards of the river Plata and the Portuguese of Brasil. He even asserts, that the ships, in putting into the southern coasts, would steer very little out of their ordinary course for India.

By the establishment we have made on the Malouine Islands \* we have put the India Company, and all the French navigators in the most favourable situation for accomplishing these two objects. The Malouine Islands are not near so far to the South: the climate is much more temperate; they stand more convenient for the river Plata and the Brasils; more in the neighbourhood of Magellan's lands and Patagonia, with the inhabitants of which it would be so much the more easy to fix a commerce, as they are already acquainted with the Europeans by the traffic they carry on with the Spaniards.

Let us consider the situation of the southern lands discovered by Monsieur de Gonneville, a gentleman of Normandy. In 1503 he fitted out a vessel at Honfleur, and set sail in the month of June for the East Indies. After doubling the Cape of Good Hope, and meeting with a gust of wind, which was succeeded by calms, he thought of nothing but gaining some land, where he might recover the fatigues of the voyage. He had the good fortune to discover some, and called them the South Indies. He lay there six months, during which time he refitted, formed an

C 2

intercourse

\* Since this journal was written, France has ceded the Malouine Islands to Spain.



intercourse with the natives, and established himself so far in their confidence, that their King, Arosca, trusted his son Effomeric to him to make the voyage of France, on condition that he should bring him back in twenty months. Gonnevillè sailed from thence the third of July 1504 laden with the produce of the country. In the Channel he met with an English privateer, which took him, and carried him into Guernsey. This unlucky accident prevented his arriving in France till the year 1505; where he made his complaint and declaration to the admiralty at Honfleur. No advantage was made at that time of M. de Gonnevillè's discovery; who to make amends to Effomeric for not being able to keep his word with him, married him to one of his relations, and left him at his death half his fortune.

The Sieur Bouvet, who had some notion of this discovery, presented a memorial to the *Compagnie des Indes*, who fitted out two ships for him, the Eagle, and Mary, with which he sailed from l'Orient the 19th of July 1738. The 26th of November he got into 35 degrees South latitude and 344° longitude from the French meridian. Here he began to meet with fogs, which continued almost constantly while the two ships remained in company. They were often so thick, that the Eagle's crew could not discover the Mary at the distance of musquet shot; so that they had the greatest difficulty to keep together. The 3d of December, being in 39 degrees 20 minutes latitude, and 351 longitude, they began to discover some sea-weed, and more birds than ordinary, which made them imagine they were not far from land: they therefore took all the precautions necessary in such circumstances. The 5th, they found themselves in 42 degrees 40 minutes latitude, and 354° longitude. The 7th, in 44 latitude, and 355 longitude. The 10th, 44° latitude, and the first meridian, where several geographers place the nearest point of the Southern Continent. The 12th, they made 7 degrees longitude; the 15th, 48 degrees, 50 minutes latitude, which is equal to that of Paris, in 7° longitude. Here they saw ice, which they looked upon as a certain indication of land. They even observed a  
change

change in the colour of the sea, and saw a great number of Puffins, and other birds, several of which flapped their wings, like land birds. They perceived Penguins also, an amphibious bird, a description of which is given in my journal. In proportion as they got farther to the South, the ice increased. The 16th they saw Penguins again, and a sea wolf; the fogs and ice prevented their rising to the 54th degree of latitude before the last day of December. At length, on the first of January, about three in the afternoon, they discovered a high land, covered with snow, and very foggy, which they took for a large head-land, and called it *Cape Circumcision*. It lies, according to the account of the Sieur Bouvet, in 54 degrees South latitude, and from 27 to 28 degrees longitude from the French meridian. The 6th, they saw a prodigious quantity of birds, of a very fine white, and of the size of pigeons: they thought they saw land at the distance of one or two leagues. The next day they perceived a new land, nearly North North East of Cape Circumcision. They continued in search of it till the 9th, at four in the morning, when the weather being fair and the fog gone off, they found that the supposed land was nothing more than a mist.

From the time they came within sight of land, they had reaped no other benefit from it than that of concluding, that it extended from eight to ten leagues E. N. E. and from six to seven leagues East. They had not been able to discover even, whether what they saw was an island, or whether it made part of the Continent. At length the bad weather came on, the season was advanced, and the crew were in a bad state of health. All these considerations induced M. de Lozier Bouvet to take the resolution of going to see for some place to put in at, which might be more easy and more convenient for their landing. He took his course with a view of finding the place where Gonneville had landed; which, according to the account of it, is situated in a latitude equal to that of some of the provinces of France. The most northern lie in 51 degrees, which is the latitude of the Malouine Islands. He made therefore for the parallel from 51 to 52, and passed.



passed it with the same inconveniencies, without reaping any kind of advantage. They reckoned themselves in  $51^{\circ}$  longitude, when they were really in  $55^{\circ}$ , as they found on landing at the Cape of Good Hope. They kept the Cape to the North of them, and continued that course till the 5th of February, when the two vessels separated, the Mary steering for the Cape with M. Bouvet, and the Eagle for the isle of France with Mr. Hay.

M. Bouvet left the Cape of Good Hope the 31st of March, on his return to France, and in his route saw Trinity Island in  $351$  degrees longitude from the meridian of Teneriff, and  $348^{\circ} 30'$  from the French meridian, 20 degrees 20 minutes latitude. He likewise saw the isle of Ascension, which he places in 349 degrees longitude. He says, that Trinity Island is, without that name, very well described by the *Flambeau Anglois*. After we had got, says M. Bouvet, within gun shot of this island, we saw three-fourths of it distinctly. It is properly speaking, nothing more than a rock inaccessible on all sides. There are four little islands between 8 and 9 leagues East of it. Oliver de Noort, who had the command of four Dutch ships in 1599, followed this parallel of 20 degrees 20 minutes from this island as far as the coast of Brazil, and found no other in his course. This has made it imagined, that what is called Martin de Vaz's Island, and the Island of Ascension are the same with Trinity Island\*, which goes under these three different names. We have been more fortunate in our enterprize than M. Bouvet was in his. The settlement we made at the Malouine Islands would answer all the purposes of that he designed to make on the Southern Continent,

if

\* What M. Bouvet says here of Trinity Island is very conformable to what we saw near the island of Ascension, which is recounted in this journal, on 27th April 1764. But though their situation in respect of latitude does not differ more than 12 minutes, the longitude is absolutely different; since, according to his estimation, Trinity Island is at 348 degrees 30 minutes from the French meridian, which answers to about 10 degrees from the meridian of Paris. While we were reconnoitring the island of Ascension, I estimated its situation at 32 degrees 25 minutes from the latter meridian. It should follow from thence that Trinity Island and the Island of Ascension are really distinct from each other; which is contrary to the opinion of several navigators.



if the India Company's ships would take their route by the South Sea to China, the Philippine Islands, &c. and for the South Sea trade. The author of Anson's Voyage expresses himself upon this point in the following manner, page 54 & seq. 4to edition, printed for Charles Anthony Jombert. "I have proved above, that all our future expeditions to the South Seas must run a considerable risque of proving abortive, whilst we are under the necessity of touching at Brazil in our passage thither; an expedient therefore, that might relieve us from this difficulty, would surely be a subject worthy of the attention of the public." We may add, that this port is too far from the nearest that can be found in the South Sea to be of sufficient advantage. We put into St. Catherine's as well as Admiral Anson: we had not indeed, like him, reason to complain of the reception we met with; on the contrary, we owe our acknowledgements to the Governor, as will be seen in this journal; but the other inconveniences of this harbour are such as he has reported them. The unhealthy air and perpetual fogs, which are found there, are enough to create a disgust.

"The best method of effecting this, (says the same author) would without doubt be by a discovery of some place more to the southward, where ships might refresh, and supply themselves with the necessary sea stock for their voyage round Cape Horn. And we have in reality the imperfect knowledge of two places, which might perhaps, on examination, prove extremely convenient for this purpose: the first of them is Pepys's Island \* in the latitude of 47 degrees South, and laid down by Dr. Halley about eighty leagues to the eastward of Cape Blanco, on the coast of Patagonia; the second is Falkland's Isles in the latitude of 51° † nearly South of Pepys's Island. The first of these was discovered

\* In the second voyage to the Malouines M. de Bougainville endeavoured for several days, without success, to find this supposed Pepys's Island: the same attempt was made in the third voyage, and proved equally unsuccessful.

† *Note of the translator.* The original English says 51°  $\frac{1}{2}$ . The rest, there being no very material difference, is copied verbatim from the original.

discovered by Captain Cowley in his voyage round the World, in the year 1686, who represents it as a commodious place for ships to wood and water at; and says, it is provided with a very good and capacious harbour, where a thousand sail of ships might ride at anchor in great safety; that it abounds with fowls, and as the shore is either rocks or sand, it seems to promise great plenty of fish."

This reasoning appears to be merely conjectural, and very boldly advanced on the part of Captain Cowley. It is easy to convince one's self of this by reading his relation, since he says in so many words, that *the bad weather hindered his landing there, he not having been able to put his longboat to sea*. If then he really did see it, it was only in his passage, as many navigators have a multitude of other islands and continents, which are still unknown to us, as well in respect to the quality and productions of the soil as to the real situation of their coasts. Since this captain did not go on shore there, how could he know, that it is a good place to water at? Perhaps there is no fresh water. As to wood, we have been deceived by appearances in running along the coast of the Malouines: we thought we saw some, and after landing, these appearances vanished into cornflags, a sort of rush or plant with long, flat, strait leaves, which grows on a hillock of three feet in height at least, and the leaves clustering together form, as they rise from the hillock, an eminence of six or seven feet. See the extract from the Sieur Alexander Guyot's journal at the end of this work.

"The second place, or Falkland's Isles, (proceeds the Admiral) have been seen by many ships both *French* and *English*, being the land laid down by Frezier in his chart of the extremity of South America under the title of the *new islands*. Woods Rogers, who ran along the N. E. coast of these isles in the year 1708, tells us, that they extended about two degrees in length, and appeared with gentle descents from hill to hill, and seemed to be good ground with woods and harbours (see what we have said in relation to this in the preceding paragraph). Either of these



these places, as they are islands at a considerable distance from the Continent, may be supposed from their latitude, to lie in a climate sufficiently temperate. It is true, they are too little known to be at present recommended for proper places of refreshment for ships bound to the southward: but if the admiralty should think it adviseable to order them to be surveyed, which may be done at a very small expence, by a vessel fitted out on purpose; and if, on this examination, one or both of these places should appear proper for the purpose intended, it is scarcely to be conceived of what prodigious import a convenient station might prove, situated so far to the southward, and so near Cape Horn. The Duke and Duchess of Bristol were but thirty-five days from their losing sight of Falkland's Isles to their arrival at Juan Fernandez in the South Seas: and as the returning back is much facilitated by the western winds I doubt not but a voyage might be made from Falkland's Isles to Juan Fernandez, and back again in little more than two months."

If Woods Rogers only ran along the North East coast of Falkland's or the Malouine Isles, how could he know, that they did not extend more than about two leagues? We ran along only one side of the coasts of the principal island and found that it extended more than three degrees from East to North East. It is true, we observed, that it is composed of eminences with gentle descents from one to another, but the ground did never appear to us to be covered with wood, although we steered close along the shore: we even doubted if there was any there, not having been able to find it during the stay we made in all the three voyages.



AN  
HISTORICAL JOURNAL  
OF MY  
VOYAGE  
TO THE  
MALOUINE ISLANDS,  
WITH THE

Observations I made on the Inhabitants and on the  
Natural History of the Places I met with in my Way.

I LEFT Paris the 17th of August 1763, at two o'clock in the afternoon. We stopped at Pontchartrain, in expectation of M. d'Arboulin, at that time Administrator General of the posts in France, who was returning from his estate at Montigny to Paris. M. de Bougainville, his nephew, was desirous of consulting with him on the arrangements necessary to be taken relative to the expences attending the building the two frigates, and the voyage we were going to undertake: M. d'Arboulin had a large share in the undertaking. We waited for him till near seven o'clock; he came at last, and after a conference of about an hour set out for Paris, and we at the same time for St. Malo. We travelled the two following nights and days, stopping only at Rennes for a few hours in the middle of the

D 2 . . . . . day



## JOURNAL OF MY VOYAGE

day to let the heat go off, which was excessive, and to fasten one of our wheels, the spokes of which could not be kept in the nave. On Sunday, the 20th, about two in the morning, we arrived at Beaufejour. This is a very pretty country seat, situated at one end of St. Servant. M. Bougainville de Nerville, cousin-german to M. de Bougainville, had arrived there five days before us, and waited our coming. We drank but one glass of cyder and ran to bed, having more desire to sleep than eat.

M. Duclos Guyot, who had been pitched upon to command the *Eagle* frigate, under the orders of M. de Bougainville, came to meet us at Beaufejour, with some of the officers who were to embark with us. I passed my time in seeing the towns of St. Malo and St. Servant, and the environs, till the 25th, when we went to Port Solidor, for the ceremony of baptising our two frigates, which was performed with the usual solemnities. All the officers and sailors, who were to embark in them, were on board. M. N. chaplain and director of the hospital of St. Saviour, in the town of St. Malo, said mass on board the *Eagle*, and performed all the ceremonies customary upon such occasions. The two frigates, anchored close by each other, gave a general salute at the beginning of the mass, and another at the end during the prayer for the King.

The next day, Don Jamin, prior of the Benedictines of the convent of St. Benoit, with whom I had been much connected, while he was professor of divinity in the abbey of St. Germain des Près at Paris, entertained M. de Bougainville, Mess. Duclos, Guyot, Chênart de la Gyraudais, de Belcourt, Lieutenant of infantry, l' Huillier de la Serre, Engineer, and myself, at dinner.

We embarked our baggage, beds, and other necessaries for the voyage, and the 29th we lay on board. It was the first of September before every thing was embarked.

By five o'clock that morning we left Solidor, with a brisk wind to N. W. in the frigate *Eagle*, with a crew of 100 men, mounting 20 guns, pierced for 24, commanded by the Sieur Duclos Guyot of St. Malo, Captain of a fireship, in company with the  
floop.

sloop *Sphinx*, crew 40 men, mounting 8 guns and 6 swivels, commanded by the *Sieur Chênart de la Gyraudais* of St. Malo, Lieutenant of a frigate, both under the command of M. de Bougainville, Knight of St. Louis, Colonel of infantry, and Captain of a ship: at ten in the morning we were in the road of Rance, or St. Malo.

We were only waiting for a favourable wind to set sail the next morning, the 2d of September, when three or four persons of St. Malo raised difficulties at the Admiralty upon our departure. M. de Bougainville, having received notice of it, went on shore to St. Malo, appeared at the Admiralty, and answered every objection so fully, that judgment was given in his favour. Thinking, however, that it was proper to inform the ministry of this transaction, he sent off a courier with dispatches at two in the morning, Sunday the 4th. The courier, who was his own servant, made so much haste, that he returned to St. Malo, with an answer, in fifty-nine hours from his setting off.

On the 8th at night, being the nativity of the Virgin, the wind appearing at S. S. W. orders were given to unmoor, which was accordingly done by one in the morning, and at half past six we set sail, the gale continuing fresh.

We kept under sail the 9th, and after having cleared the harbour, the wind being got about to S. W. and veering more and more to Westward, as we approached Cape Frehel, we came to anchor about noon. The sloop *Sphinx* followed our example. Our two frigates were then in the same situation in which the English fleet was at the affair of St. Cas, where they were so roughly handled. This anchorage is by no means secure: many ships have been lost here.

While we remained here, I took the opportunity of putting into a small cask, which held about six gallons of water, a composition of M. Sequin's, to preserve water from spoiling in long voyages. A chymist had given another, for the same purpose, to M. de Bougainville. It was a paste of a greyish cast; which seemed to be made of clay, and the powder of crude antimony.

Some



Some said, there was a mixture of crude mercury in it. But, as M. de Bougainville did not shew it to me before we got on board, I did not analyse it; and he, under the uncertainty he was in with respect to the ingredients, was not very desirous of trying the effects of it. For myself, as I knew the composition of M. Sequin's drug, which is nothing but spirit of salt, and that, at the same time, it preserves the water from corruption, and renders it more wholesome and useful in preventing or curing the scurvy, I made no scruple of trying it. What were the effects of it will be seen in the sequel.

The 15th we got again under sail, and the wind being still contrary, got sight of the light-house of Frehel the 17th, at the distance of about four leagues: on the 18th we resolved to come to anchor. Accordingly we stood in to shore: the Sphinx did the same; and, after much difficulty in weathering the castle of la Latte, we anchored about two in the afternoon.

As the sea was become very calm, and the wind tolerably quiet, by nine this morning, M. Bougainville, Mess. de Belcourt, l'Huillier, Donat, de la Gyraudais Captain of the Sphinx and myself, had been to the island *Agôt* to shoot rabbits; but we saw only two in the course of three hours. As I had no other game in view than the finding of plants, or other curiosities, that might happen to lye in my way, I amused myself with picking up the seeds of radishes, or wild horse-radish, and some shells. Towards noon, we began to find ourselves hungry, we had killed nothing, and were at a loss for our dinner. Upon this we called a council, and it was resolved to go and beg a dinner of the prior of St. Jacut. We went immediately into our boat, and got to the abbey about two o'clock. The prior, and the other Benedictines, my brethren, received us in the most obliging manner, and treated us with the same hospitality, which we had met with the sixth of this month, when we dined five or six of us with the prior of Benedictines at St. Malo. The prior of St. Jacut had dined on board the Eagle the 13th, and M. de Bougainville had done the honours in the best manner.

As soon as dinner was over at St. Jacut, I put the prior in mind of the offer he had made us of greens from their garden. He, with great civility, gave us leave to take what we pleased, and we loaded our boat with cabbages and leeks.

On the 20th, at one in the afternoon, we shipped our boats, wind at S. S. W. brisk gale, inclinable to squalls. By three we were under sail. After doubling the point of the castle of la Latte, we found the wind at N. W. so came to anchor again.

At nine in the evening we had a violent squall of wind, which lasted above half an hour. During this, an Acadian, one of our passengers, stood on the forecastle with his arms folded, and, while the crew were all employed, kept looking on with the utmost composure. M. de Bougainville, to whom a complaint had been made of this very man a few days before for the same kind of behaviour, and who had spoke to him about it, could not now refrain for giving him a reprimand. The Acadian, without returning an answer, went below deck, and there exclaimed loudly against this treatment to his wife, his father, and two other Acadian families, which were likewise passengers, advising them to follow his example; for after all, says he, we were not hired, nor taken on board to work our passage, but as volunteers and passengers; and, for my part, I would much rather have staid in France, than have embarked on such conditions.

All this discourse was reported to M. de Bougainville, who was piqued at it, and with reason. These Acadian families had lived at St. Servant, and St. Malo, ever since the English took Acadia from us. The King allowed them so much a head, in the same manner as his regular troops; and these families had scarce any other resource than this sort of pay and their own labour. M. de Bougainville offered to take them on board with him, and to carry them to a country where he would give them a landed property, and many other advantages, which they could never expect in France. He had even furnished them with goods and money in advance. Upon the report that was made to him of the discourse of this Acadian, he said, there was nothing more to be done than  
to



to set them on shore, and send them back to St. Servant ; since they were fond of misery, they might go there and enjoy it. As soon as this was told to the other families, it made so great an impression on them, that the women burst into tears, and the men upbraided the Acadian, who had been the cause of it, and a disagreement among them ensued. Of this M. de Bougainville was soon informed. The next day, the 21st, after prayers, he called them all before him ; there are, said he, some discontented persons among you, who repent of having embarked with me. I do not require you to do the duty of common sailors : I did not take you on board with me upon that footing ; but, at the same time, I did not mean that you should consider yourselves as mere passengers, and not lend a hand upon occasion. You are at liberty to go back to St. Malo, St. Servant, or whatever place you think fit ; you have only to speak, and you will be set on shore immediately.

The Acadian and his father declared, they chose to return to St. Servant. The two other families desired to go the voyage. Early in the afternoon the father, the son and his wife were landed near St. Cast, with their effects ; and M. de Bougainville, out of charity, left them the money he had obtained in advance for them from the King. The other two families were rejoiced at this separation and congratulated each other upon their departure. The wife was of a peevish temper, and her husband was so jealous of her, that he would scarce leave her an instant ; he watched even her slightest motions, and would infallibly have disturbed the good understanding they were desirous of preserving among themselves. A perfect union prevailed between the two families, that made the voyage with us, and were landed and settled by us on the Malouine Islands. One of them consisted of a man, his wife, two children, one a boy of three years old, the other a girl of one year, and two sisters of the wife, one twenty, and the other seventeen. The other family was composed of a man, his wife, a boy of four years old, and the wife's  
sister,

sister, about sixteen. The wife was ready to lie in, when we left the island on our return to France.

In the morning of the 23d of September, the wind got to E. N. E. an easy gale. As it seemed steady in that point, M. Duclos our Captain made a signal to bring in our long-boat, and yawl, which were on shore, the long boat to get water, and the yawl to fetch the sailors, and the women that washed the linen. M. de Bougainville, M. de Belcourt, M. l'Huillier, and M. Donat were out in pursuit of game, near two leagues up the country, and proposed to dine at the Castle of la Latte, where M. Mauclair and myself expected them till half past two. M. Duclos seeing that none of them came on board fired a gun, which hastened the return of our sportsmen; but as the time pressed, and they had dined in the country, they would not make any stay at the castle of la Latte. We sent the dinner on board again, where M. Mauclair, and I contented ourselves with a single glass till supper.

At three, signal was given to the Sphinx to weigh anchor. At six, our boats being embarked, we set sail from Cape Frehel; and after several tacks to double the castle of la Latte, at nine we were North and South of the point of the Cape.

On Monday, the 25th, about four in the afternoon, we threw out a line with a double hook. The hook was scarcely in the water, before a fish, in shape and colour resembling a mackrel, bit at it, and was taken. It weighed about thirty pounds, and had not two handfuls of entrails, liver, &c. All the rest was solid flesh, like that of the thunny, of which it had the colour and flavour. An excellent soup was made of it the next day. Several slices of it were brought up with different sauces, and we found it very good: it is somewhat dry, but not so much as the bonito. It is called by the French, *Grand-Oreille*.

The hook, with which it was caught, was not baited with flesh, fish, or any insect. It is composed of two stems of iron, about the thickness of the quill of a pen, fastened together. They cover this double shank with tow, so as to give it the form of a

E

spindle:



spindle : the tow is covered with a piece of strong white cloth and a plate of lead ; to this they join two or four white feathers from the wing of a goose or fowl, placing them in such a manner as to resemble fins when extended. In this state, the hook has nearly the appearance of a flying fish. The end of the shank is turned in a ring, through which they put a brass wire of almost the same thickness, and about two feet and a half in length ; the whole of this is thrown into the water, being fastened to a cord about the thickness of one's little finger, and of the length of twelve fathom. One end of this cord is fastened to the stern of the ship ; the other, where the hook is, drags at a great distance in the track of the ship.

We continued our voyage for several days without any thing remarkable, wind varying, and weather generally stormy. We saw several ships at a distance, which we took to be on their return from the cod fishery on the banks of Newfoundland. One of them brought to, and spoke with us.

On the 2d of October, about nine in the morning, we descried a vessel without masts, and bore down upon her in order to give her what assistance we could. At ten we spoke with her. She proved to be a Dutch Merchantman of Amsterdam ; she was coming from Curasol, and meeting with a gust of wind at about a hundred leagues from Bermudas, they were obliged to cut away the mizzen and main mast. We inquired if they were in want of any thing ; they answered, that they had five French ladies on board whom they were carrying to France, but that they could not put their boat to sea. We acquainted them, that we were just come from France, and should not return thither for several months, for which reason we could not take charge of the ladies ; but if they were in want of any thing else, they might come and fetch it. They again told us, that they could not put their boat to sea. The sea indeed ran high, and we not caring to expose ours to it, wished them a better voyage and continued our course S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  W.



The 5th, at break of day we discovered a sail. We were in those latitudes, where the Sallee Rovers sometimes cruize; and we knew, they had a Frigate at sea, called the Bird, of 36 guns and 300 men, which the English had sold to the Salletines, and they had given the command of it to a renegade captain of Provence, a good seaman and of approved courage. They had also a sloop of 12 guns and a hundred men. In consequence of this, the commandant of our two frigates had issued out orders, that they might be able to act in concert, in case of an attack. The plan of the engagement was fixed up; the guns and small arms were prepared; every man repaired to the post allotted him, and we bore down. It was settled, that if this was the Salletine frigate, the Sphinx should hoist English colours, and seem to make all the sail she could to get under the fire of the frigate, to avoid falling into our hands. We in consequence were to hoist French colours, and make a shew of pursuing the Sphinx, firing at her at the same time as if to bring her to. As soon as the Salletine frigate should be got between the Sphinx and us, the Sphinx was to hoist French colours, and then make her a compliment of her whole broadside, so that she should find herself between two fires. It was hoped, that by this manœuvre, we might make up for our want of numbers, and shatter her so by a vigorous attack, that she should be obliged to strike.

Our men were brave fellows, and displayed at this time an air of gaiety and resolution. They had indeed a great confidence in the skill and courage of our captains, and other officers, with whom they had made cruizes in the last war, and under whose command they had taken many prizes, and had even made themselves masters of some English ships at close quarters.

As we neared the ship we had seen, we thought we could discover that she was English built. But as we knew, the English had sold several ships to the Salletines; and this, notwithstanding we bore down upon her, hoisted no colours, we took her for a Salletine scout. On this we fired a gun, and advanced upon her. Still she hoisted no colours. We now fired a

loaded gun, and it is probable she felt the wind of the ball. She then lay to for a moment, and afterwards stood for us, without hoisting. When she was got pretty near, she hoisted English colours, and passed so close to us, that we discovered the captain to be the same Guernsey man, who served as pilot to the English in the last war, when they made their descents at Cancale and St. Cas. The usual questions were put to him in French, as, from what port, and whither he was bound, and what was the name of his ship. He made no answer. M. de Belcourt took the speaking trumpet, and put the same questions to him in English, with all the embellishments of the emphatic sea style, adding, that he deserved to have had his ship sunk for not hoisting, after having been twice fired at. To this he replied in English, and alledged, that his colours had been entangled among the goods. It proved to be a merchant ship with two masts, bound, as he told us, from Lisbon to St. Michael's, one of the Azores.

The 8th in the morning being calmed, we sent out our cutter for M. de la Gyraudais, captain of the Sphinx. He came on board us at seven. M. de Bougainville, and M. du Clos our captain, had a conference with him. He received orders for his rendezvous in case of separation, and exact drawings of the places we were to touch at, and of those we expected to find in our course. M. de la Gyraudais returned to his own ship about nine.

The 9th and 10th, the calms continued with fogs, and some storms of rain. The 11th the same. The currents here seem to run North; as may be conjectured from the difference we found between our reckonings and observation of yesterday and to-day, in which time we had made seven leagues and a half of way. The 13th in the morning, the sea being fallen after a storm which rose the evening before, we caught three fish called bonitos. There were not less than fifteen of them and two gold fish, playing about on the starboard of our stern. We saw at the same time some other fishes which go under the name of pilots. One of these was taken in a net; the bonitos were caught with a line,



line, baited with the figure of a flying fish. These weighed each of them about twenty pounds; the pilot was not more than eight inches long.

The 14th, being between  $29^{\circ}$  and  $30^{\circ}$  latitude, we expected to meet with the trade winds, of which we had hitherto had no signs. Some of our sailors, who had the most experience, had assured us they were commonly found under this parallel. M. de Bougainville was so impatient for them, that he never stirred out of his cabin without going to examine the compass. He was obliged however to put up with such winds as happened to blow.

At two in the afternoon, the Sphinx, which was to eastward of us, attracted our attention by hoisting a white flag at the foremast head, which was the signal agreed upon in case of seeing land. We answered her with the same signal, and found it to be Palm Island, the farthest to the North West of the Canary Islands. It bore E. S. E. of us by the compass, and appeared to us, at about 15 or 18 leagues distance, in the form it is represented in the plate.

We discovered another at the same time, more to the South West, which exhibited nearly the figure B.

The sight of these Islands was of use in correcting our reckonings and observations, and we found that we were about 20 leagues farther West than we had reckoned.

The 16th, at three in the afternoon, we made a signal to the Sphinx, that we were going to make all our sail; which we had not hitherto done since our departure, in order that she might be able to keep up with us. The Sphinx was not near so fast a sailer as our ship, and had kept us back at least a hundred leagues; but we did not choose to quit company sooner, for fear of meeting with the Sallee Rovers, which would have required our mutual assistance to extricate us from them. At this time that we had got out of the latitudes, in which they cruize, we resolved to stretch away for the place of rendezvous; that by arriving there as soon as possible, we might have all the refreshments,



ments, which the Sphinx might stand in need of, ready against her coming in, by which means our stay might be shortened.

As soon as the Sphinx had answered our signal, we set more sails, the wind blowing fresh, and by six o'clock in the evening she was at least three leagues a stern of us; and before next morning we lost sight of her.

On the 18th and 19th, we saw a great number of flying fishes. They were pursued by thunnies and gold fish, which sprang three or four feet out of the water to seize them. We threw out several hooks, but not one of them would bite.

During great part of both these days, our weather had been very stormy and the sea ran high. On the morning of the 20th, a calm succeeded, with some rain at intervals.

These calms and the winds which never blew fresh, and were continually changing, did not promise us a short trip. We began all of us to be impatient at not meeting with the trade winds, which would have been so useful, and were so much the object of our wishes. M. de Bougainville particularly exclaimed against all former navigators, who have laid it down as a certainty, that those winds never fail to blow in these latitudes. He told us, that, as we had experience of the contrary, he was resolved on his return to Paris, to present a memorial to the Academy of Sciences, to prove the non-existence of trade winds; at least, the little dependence that navigators ought to have on what is related of their constant influence.

The 21st in the afternoon, we saw a great number of flying fishes, and of their enemies the bonitos, gold fish, and thunnies.

The morning of the 22d presented us with about half a score of flying fish, which attempting to fly over the frigate had fallen foul of the sails, and dropped upon deck. They were dressed for dinner, and we found them extremely good and very delicate eating. I kept one in order to paint it from the life, the figure of it is to be found in the plate.

This fish in these latitudes is of a fine blue on the back, which fades or grows stronger insensibly towards the bottom of the belly,

belly, where the colour is a blue with a silver cast. Its wings are fins of a greater length, which in general extend as far as the tail, but in some do not reach farther than to the middle of the body; though the fish is of the same shape, length and thickness. The one, whose figure is represented in the plate, was about ten inches from one extremity to the other.

On the 23d in the afternoon, some of the sailors seeing a number of thunnies, got on the prow of the frigate with a harpoon, and caught one of them, which weighed 72 pounds. On a close examination of it, I perceived some animals sticking, and as it were glued upon its ears. See the figure of them in their natural size in the plate. The figure marked D is the upper part of the animal, which resembled a composition of strings of catgut almost transparent. Its eyes were two little black spots placed above the mouth B. They fasten themselves on the thunny by means of two legs marked C, and two others considerably smaller marked D.

I took some sea water and put it in a clean glass tumbler, that I might keep this animal alive and see its motions. I perceived in this water a black spot, which at first I took for a speck of dirt; but when I attempted to take it out with the end of my finger, I observed the supposed atom to avoid my touch, and plunge under water. I attended to its motions, and found it to be a living creature of the structure and size described in the plate. It was a species of cylinder formed by ten rings, so slight and transparent, that it was necessary to put the glass between the light and the eye of the observer in order to perceive it. It swam by means of two long fibres B B, and two others that are almost imperceptible C, which in gathering up and lengthening out again, gave the rings of the cylinder a motion perfectly corresponding to that of a quail-pipe, or a powder-machine used by hair-dressers. The body A, was of a violet colour towards C, and of a light brown towards B B.

We saw likewise a great quantity of flying fish, and we caught with a hook a bonito and a pilot, which I have painted from the life.



The naturalists pretend, on the authority no doubt of some seamen, that the pilot always goes before the shark, and that it is for this reason that fish has obtained the name of the pilot, as being director of the other's course. For my own part, I have sometimes observed one or two pilots before or after each shark we caught; but we have often seen pilots without sharks, as well as sharks without pilots.

Father Feuillée, p. 173, confounds the pilot with the sucking fish, and makes them both the same. "The sharks, says he, are accompanied by little fishes, which keep continually with them, and choose rather to share their fate than to abandon them; they swim always a head of them, at such a distance that the sharks cannot catch them, which has procured them the name of pilots. We did not catch a single shark without finding some of these small fishes sticking to his back, by means of a yellowish, cartilaginous membrane of a circular form, which they have on the top of their heads: this membrane has an infinite number of small holes filled with fibres, which, to all appearance, serve to draw from the skin of the shark some substance for their nourishment.

The same author allows the shark but three rows of teeth, one of which, he says, is composed of triangular teeth, and these are of a greater length than the others; I have counted seven rows of them in the mouths of all the sharks we took, all of them moveable and triangular. Nor were the suckers of these sucking fish of a circular, but of an elliptical form, such as is described in the figure I have given of them in the sequel.

The 24th the same winds continued, which we had had for some days. These were in fact, the trade winds we had so long looked out for, under which name are comprehended all those which blow from S. S. E. through the easterly point to N. N. E. inclusive. These are the most favourable winds that can blow, for ships bound from Europe to South America, the windward and leeward Islands, and the Gulph of Mexico.

About eight in the morning on the 25th, we had sight of land on our starboard side. At noon, we judged it to be the



Island of Bonavista, one of the Cape de Verd Islands, situated North East of St. Jago, the largest and most populous of those isles. It bore North West of us, about nine leagues: the figure of it, in the most extensive view we had, appeared according to the representation in the plate.

This island, like the rest, abounds in wild horses, goats, and several other animals, notwithstanding the soil is rocky and barren. It is seen at a great distance by means of its white cliffs, from which circumstance it derives its name.

We now found that we were near twenty leagues farther eastward than our reckoning.

The wind blowing fresh from N. E. to N. N. E. accompanied with fine weather, afforded us a view of another of the Cape de Verd Islands, about four o'clock in the afternoon, which goes by the name of Mayo's Island. The soil here likewise is rocky and barren. There are nevertheless a great number of bulls, cows, goats and asses. A considerable quantity of salt also is made here. The air is hot and unhealthy. The most southern point of the island bore S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  W. and the most northern W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. W. of us, and the whole appeared as exhibited in the plate.

The 27th, after having had some lightning in the night, and in the morning a cloudy sky, with a high sea, and a squall of wind at half past ten, succeeded by a storm at E. S. E. which was of short duration, the wind came about to the usual points with an easy gale; and about three in the afternoon, we caught a bonito, which weighed forty pounds.

The 28th and 29th, proved very stormy, but notwithstanding this we were not driven out of our course.

On Sunday the 30th, in the morning, the sky cleared up and the wind came fair again.

At eight o'clock, Peter Lainez of St. Malo, a cabin boy, about twelve years of age, going into the fore-castle fell over-board, without any one's knowing how the accident happened. The second mate, who was going a stern, seeing him float along the starboard side, cried out immediately, that there was one of

the crew overboard. We ran at this time four knots an hour, with a quarter wind. They threw out a plank directly from the stern gallery, and whatever else was at hand either of board or any other buoyant materials, in hopes the poor fellow might be able to reach some one of them, and keep himself by that means above water, till the boat could be put out to take him up. The whole crew was in motion, and every possible means were used to stop the ship. Many ran up the main mast, others got on the quarter deck, all intent on looking for, and discovering the cabin boy. After this, the boat was put to sea, though it was then very rough; it was manned with six stout sailors, under the command of the mate, who went in search of the cabin boy to the right and left, wherever they thought they had a chance of finding him, to the distance of half a league from the ship, but without success. When they had been out about three quarters of an hour, a signal was made for the return of the boat, which was effected with much difficulty. We re-embarked her, and continued our route.

The names of the crew were then called over, in order to find out who was the person missing; for we did not yet know that it was the cabin boy I have just now mentioned. He was the only one, that did not appear. They looked in his hammock and searched the whole ship over for him, and not finding him any where, it was easy to conclude, that this Peter Lainez was the hand we had lost.

At four in the afternoon, after vespers, the cloaths of the deceased cabin boy, an inventory of which had been taken in the morning, were sold by auction. Our commandant, M. de Bougainville, bought almost every thing, and distributed them gratis among the cabin boys, who were least in a condition to procure any for themselves. The sale amounted to fifty crowns.

The 31st, the weather was stormy at intervals, each storm being succeeded by an almost dead calm. During these calms we caught, in less than two hours; two sharks, which weighed about a hundred pounds each. They had both of them fishes  
sticking



sticking to their bodies near the head. These fish are called sucking fish. I painted one after the life, in two figures; the first shews the side of the sucker, which is upon the head; the other figure represents the belly of the fish. It was seven inches in length.

A few hours before, some hundred porpoises, whose figure may be seen in the plate, made their appearance within pistol shot, and seemed as if they had come on purpose to amuse us. They sprang out of the water in an extraordinary manner. Several of them in cutting their capers, leaped at least three or four feet high, and turned round not less than three times in the air, as if they had been on a spit. One may judge from hence of the strength of this fish.

On the 2d of November, at three in the afternoon, a storm rose at South East attended with a heavy rain. During this storm one of the sailors brought me a flying fish, eight inches and a half long, which had just fallen on the fore-castle. We had seen, before the storm came on, shoals of thunnies and bonitos. They leaped out of the water, and made the sea foam, as if they were fighting with each other.

On the 3d, a shark of a middling size, and about a hundred and fifty pound weight, came a stern of us. He bit at the bait, as soon as it was offered to him. When he was raised out of the water, he gave a sudden jirk, by which he disengaged himself from the hook, leaving part of his jaw behind him. Not dismayed or disheartened by this loss, the shark perceiving the same piece of bacon, which had been made use of as a bait for him the first time, thrown out again, returned to it with the same greediness, and swallowed at once not only the bacon, but the piece of his jaw, without however being caught by the hook. Another piece of bacon was immediately put on: the shark was without doubt very hungry, for he came again to seize that. But as at this time there was a dead calm, and besides, this fish is neither wholesome nor palatable food, instead of endeavouring to take him, we amused ourselves near an hour with



only letting him smell the bait. When he attempted to swallow it, we drew it suddenly out of the water, and this was repeated at least a dozen times without producing the effect, which is said to be so common upon these occasions, of making the shark spring out of the water in order to seize it.

Another thing I must observe, is, that I did not see him turn upon his back to swallow the bait, but only a very little on one side. M. de Bougainville, while we were amusing ourselves in this manner, fired at him twice with musquet ball, but whether he missed him, though almost at the muzzle of his piece, or whether the skin was too tough for the ball to penetrate, the shark was not in the least disturbed in his motions by it; he kept swimming round and round the stern, and at last swallowed this second bait without being hooked. A squall of wind rising about this time, we left the shark to employ himself elsewhere.

The 4th and 5th, we had storms and calms at intervals. The 6th, about ten at night, we had a squall of wind, which cleared the sky. At this time we saw some stars; a sight we had not had for near a week, the sky having been always gloomy and covered.

The morning of the 7th, the sun rose fine, but with several clouds scattered round it. Before it appeared, the rays darting upon these clouds exhibited one of the most beautiful sights in the world for variety and brightness of colours. I was mortified more than can be imagined, not having it in my power to paint such a day-break, which would have made a most brilliant picture. I have only been able to preserve a very imperfect sketch of a setting sun, which we all of us admired for near half an hour. But it is not possible with water colours to execute a picture, upon which any exact idea of it might be formed. These colours are too faint to express the brilliancy and lustre, with which the borders of the clouds were illuminated by the rays of the sun. Oil colours would without doubt be less defective in the representation; but I had not any with me.

Besides,

Besides, it would require a skilful painter to execute such a picture properly ; and I have not that qualification.

The weather continuing fine and very hot, we had all the hammocks between decks taken down, in order to dry the cloaths of the crew, which had been all wetted in the rainy days. This dampness of cloaths is a much more immediate cause of the scurvy, and many other disorders, than the salt provisions which are used at sea. A captain cannot pay too great an attention to the preserving of cleanliness among his crew, and to the airing of the hammocks, cotts, &c. if he would prevent disorders. Our captain assured me of the truth of this observation, from his own experience in the different voyages he has made to China, India, Peru, and Canada. He told me, he had always paid strict attention to this article, to which as well as to the choice of proper food, he attributed the general good health his crews had enjoyed during those voyages.

In the afternoon, we saw a large bird called by some *Goellan*, or *Gull*, and by others *Caignard*. At night a single swallow came and perched on the main mast yard, and the next morning continued flying round the ship.

During the night several flying fish dropped upon our deck. They were all of that species, which have the fins, that serve them for wings, reaching to their tail.

At five in the morning of the 9th, a bird pretty nearly of the size of a pigeon, but something longer, coming to perch on the foremast yard, one of the sailors caught him in his hand. This bird, which I have painted, and whose figure in half the natural size may be seen in the plate, is of a light brown inclining to red, almost the colour of a nut. The largest feathers of the wing and tail, are of a darker brown, or rather blackish. The bill is black, strait, and small, pierced through in the middle, with a small protuberance below, about the length of the bird's head. The upper part of the head near the bill is white; it then becomes of a pearl colour, growing deeper towards the neck, which is pretty long in proportion to its thickness. The feet are  
of



of a dark grey, webbed like those of water fowl. After having made use of this bird in the manner I shall mention hereafter, M. de Bougainville gave him to me to paint. I put him in a small press in my cabin, where I found him the next day very lively, and so little alarmed at having been taken, that when I set him on my table, he put himself in the attitude, in which I have drawn him. I gave him some food, and he eat of it, still keeping in the same posture, and continued so for three days, by which means I had full time to paint him to the life. Some of our seamen said, it was a species of the *booby* bird, because it suffered itself to be caught in the hand, and grew tame, as soon as it was taken: but he had not however the crow bill, which belongs to the booby, and has procured it the name of the duck with the narrow bill. Our seamen gave the same name to another bird also, very much resembling this, except that it has a crooked bill, like that of a parrot.

About ten o'clock in the forenoon the sea appearing of a light green cast, instead of its usual blue, and the colour continuing the same at six in the evening, we suspected that this appearance was occasioned by our being in the neighbourhood of some land, or shoal. We therefore took the precaution of sounding; but though we sounded with a hundred and twenty fathom of line, we found no bottom. Thus we were freed from the apprehensions we had entertained, and which arose from an error of the charts; almost all of them placing Brazil near fifty leagues farther West, than it is found to be by the observations of our seamen. We resolved however to sound a second time, if the sea had continued of the same colour; but as it appeared the next morning of its usual blue cast, we continued our course without taking the trouble of sounding.

Our mates, boatswain, and those of the crew, who in former voyages had passed the line, had for the last week been making preparations for *the ceremony of Baptism*, which is performed on the part and in the name of the *Bon-homme la ligne*, to all those,  
who

who have never before passed the line, without distinction of rank, or quality, or exception of person.

About seven o'clock, as we were at supper, we heard the smacking of a whip, which announced to us the arrival of a courier from the *Bon-homme la ligne*, according to custom, the evening before the ceremony I just now mentioned is to be performed. This was the cockswain properly equipped for a courier. He knocked at the cabin door. We called out, who is there? A messenger, says he, from the *Bon-homme la ligne*, lord and governor of these latitudes. Let him in, says M. de Bougainville. The door was opened, the messenger alighted, and came in, leaving his equipage at the door. This equipage was formed by two sailors tied back to back, and going upon all fours. One of them had on his head a swab, to represent the tail of the beast, the other had one for the mane, and a mask of pasteboard in the shape of a horse's head. The furniture consisted of the quarter cloths belonging to one of the boats; that is to say, of a carpet, or large piece of blue cloth, adorned with flowers de luce made of yellow stuff.

The messenger being introduced addressed our Commandant in the following terms: "*the Bon-homme la ligne, lord governor of these latitudes*, understanding, that the brave Chevalier de Bougainville, commander of the Eagle frigate, is arrived in his dominions, has ordered me to come and compliment him on his part, to let him know with how much joy he hath received the news of his arrival, to bring the best wishes for his health, and to deliver him a letter, in which my master hath expressed his own sentiments.

M. de Bougainville read the letter, which was conceived in the following terms; *Brave Chevalier, your illustrious actions have rendered the French name highly celebrated in Canada: your renown has reached the latitudes over which I reign, on the wings of fame, and the hearts of my subjects are so filled with veneration for you, that the gold fish and bonitos, the thunnies and porpoises as soon as they descried the frigate Eagle, which you command, came in shoals to me yesterday*

to



to announce your arrival. The joy, with which your presence had animated their hearts, they expressed by repeated bounds and leaps, which they continued for a long time as they passed by your ship. I send this ambassador to notify to you my own particular share in the general joy, at the same time that he delivers this letter into your hands, and I hope to-morrow to acquaint you in person, how much I am delighted with the visit you pay me.

Signed BON-HOMME LA LIGNE."

Given at the 54th minute of the first degree of latitude, and in 29 degrees three minutes longitude, of my northern dominions, the 9th day of November in the year of my reign, 7763.

M. de Bougainville, when he had read the letter, told the envoy, that he expected to have the honour of presenting himself before the *Bon-homme* the next day, and of giving an answer to his letter in person. Let the courier drink, added he, and take care of his horse: it must be a fine one; lead it in, I have a great curiosity to see it. The horse was introduced curvetting, tossing his head, pawing, and neighing. As it was possible he might be tired with his journey, and might be thirsty, a glass of wine was offered him, which he drank. The courier informed us, that his horse had two heads, one at his stem and the other at his stern, upon which the head at his stern also was treated with a glass of wine.

The courier, before he retired, presented to the commandant a bird on the part of the *Bon-homme la ligne*, the illustrious president of these latitudes having requested his acceptance of it as a token of his goodwill and affection. This was the bird which they had just before caught in the hand, and which I have mentioned above. But as we knew nothing of this at the time, we were not a little surprised at the present. We took it at first for an artificial bird, till by pecking with his beak he convinced us, that he was not only a real bird, but also in full vigour. On examination, we found it to be a fresh water bird, which served only to increase our surprize.

After supper, we assembled on the quarter-deck, and danced minuets, country dances, &c. to the tabor, and after that to two violins till near ten o'clock, when we retired to our cabbins.

Thursday, the 10th of November, at five in the morning we passed the line, at 29 degrees 3 minutes longitude according to our reckoning. At ten o'clock we saw a bird called the *Frigate*. This bird is frequently found at four hundred leagues distance from land, though it is said not to be able to support itself on the water without perishing, which is the case with birds, that are not used to live in that element. Its legs are short, thick, and gathered up close to the body. Its feet are not webbed, but furnished with strong pointed claws. Some of them measure nine feet from the tip of one wing to that of the other. By the extent of its wings when they are spread, this bird easily supports itself in the air, the motion it gives them being almost imperceptible. Sometimes it rises to so great a height, that the strongest eye loses sight of it. When it comes near any ships, it flies round the vanes of the mast head, going and returning very frequently, but never perching on any part. The size of it is nearly the same as that of a fowl. Its look is steady and piercing. It darts upon its prey with an incredible swiftness and seizes it both with its talons and bill, the upper part of which is unciform. The males have a red granulated membrane descending from their bill as far as the middle of their neck. The feathers on the belly are of a light grey, which at a distance make it appear white. Those on the back and wings are brown. This bird saw some flying fish, which he caught very artfully, by skimming along the surface of the sea, while they were flying to avoid becoming a prey to the bonitos, and other fishes, which are enemies to them. It is said, that he pursues the gull likewise and other sea birds, to make them disgorge the fish they have swallowed that he may seize upon them himself.

I do not well know for what reason this bird is called the frigate, unless it be by way of comparison between the swiftness  
 G of



of his flight, and the lightness of those ships, which go under that name, and are usually better failers than any others.

Not having been able to get a nearer view of this bird than from the top of the masts, I cannot pretend to give a description of it otherwise than from those persons, who have seen and handled them. Father Labat (Nouveaux Voyages, tom. 6. p. 395) in addition to what I have already observed, says, that this bird has large black eyes; that he seldom alights on the ground, and generally keeps himself perched, because the size of his wings, and the space which is necessary in order to put them in motion, would render it very difficult for him to rise from the ground. The feathers on his back and wings according to the same author are black, thick and strong; and those which cover the stomach and thighs, are more delicate and not so black: perhaps that which I saw was the female, or at least a young one. I killed some of them (continues the father) in the island where we were, for their grease. It is said to be an admirable specific in the sciatica, and in a numbness of the limbs, and other accidents arising from a want of circulation. The grease is to be heated, and while it is on the fire, the parts affected are to be well rubbed and chafed in order to open the pores; and some good brandy, or spirits of wine are to be mixed with the fat immediately before it is applied. A piece of blotting paper, steeped in this mixture, may be laid on the part, with compresses and a bandage to keep it in its place.

We now come to the baptism of the line.

About two o'clock in the afternoon, they began by placing a bathing tub full of sea water and two buckets on the quarter-deck: athwart, from the starboard to the larboard side, they stretched a rope, which they called *the line*, the same they used for sounding; then the drum was beaten for every body to assemble. The weather proved very seasonable for the ceremony, for it was extremely hot. Near the gangway, which leads to the state room, was placed a bench covered with the quarter cloths, which had served the evening before to caparison the

courier's horse; and this was to be the seat or throne for the lord governor of the line, his chancellor, and the vicar, who was to administer the baptism.

When every body was assembled, a voice conveyed through a speaking trumpet called out from the main mast top; *what is the name of this ship I see below within my dominions?* The Eagle, answered the captain.—*Who commands her?*—M. le Chevalier de Bougainville.—*I am very glad of it; it will give me pleasure to admit him into my society, according to the established forms and ceremonies. I received an account of him yesterday, and as a testimony of my satisfaction, am coming down into his ship with all my court.*—*A la bonne heure*, replied M. de Bougainville, a sea phrase to express, that one understands what has been said, and that one approves of and consents to it.

Upon this a sailor, who had no other covering than a pair of tarred breeches, and on his shoulders the skin of a sheep with the wool on, stained with red and yellow in large blotches, with a cap on his head made likewise of the skin of a sheep painted, with a pair of bull's horns fastened on the top, and several pieces of wood blacked, and feathers of turkies and fowls upon it; his breast, arms, legs and face, being stained in the same manner with red and yellow colours, diluted in oil, and large black whiskers; this sailor, I say, thus accoutred came down from the main mast top by the shrouds on the larboard side, with an iron chain round his middle by way of a girdle; in one hand he held the end of this chain, and in the other a pot-hook.

Six cabin boys marched before him naked, painted from head to foot with red and yellow, some of them in blotches, others in cross bands after the manner of the savages.

As soon as they came on the quarter-deck, the sailor drew them up in order, placed their thumbs on the rope, and made them dance for a quarter of an hour to the tabor. After this they approached the bathing tub, and the sailor threw several buckets of water over them.



This ceremony being finished, the descent of the lord governor of the line was announced by the throwing of white kidney beans, for sugar plumbs, from the main mast top on the quarter-deck. The Bon-homme la ligne, preceded by his whole court, took the same route as the sailor and the cabin boys; he descended slowly and majestically. His court was composed of the second mate, the boatswain, the pilot, and the gunner. The first mate represented the Bon-homme la ligne. He was covered with white sheep skins sewed together so as to make a garment of one piece. His cap, which was composed of the same materials came down over his eyes. A quantity of tow mixed with wool served him for a peruke and a beard. He had a false nose made of painted wood. Instead of a ribband, he wore across his shoulders a string of trucks of the parrels, as large as goose eggs.

His attendants were dressed up much in the same manner, except that some of them had their arms or their legs naked, and painted red and yellow, as likewise their faces ornamented with large black whiskers, and long wooden noses. One carried a mace, or club such as the savages use, another a bow, a third an ax, and a fourth a calumet. Near the lord governor was his chancellor bearing the scepter, which was a sort of mop, such as is used in spunging a cannon, after it has been fired. The cockswain dressed like a woman, and painted with coarse red paint mixed up in oil, stood close to the Bon-homme, who called him his daughter. As to the vicar, he was cloathed in a sort of linen robe, covered with pitch and tar; a cord about the thickness of one's thumb served him for a sash. He wore a square cap of pasteboard blacked over, a mask of the same, and a linen gown painted red, and carried a book in his hand. One cabin boy had a square cap painted red and black, another held a wooden censer, hanging by pack threads platted in the shape of a chain, and in the other hand a chafing dish with fire to heat the perfumes, which were made of pitch and tar. A third  
cabin

cabbin boy carried a bow and an arrow; and a fourth a bason and watering pot full of sea water for the baptism.

The whole proceffion being come down upon the deck, and the crew affembled there, the lord governor desired a conference with the commandant, who immediately advanced to receive him. *You are welcome hither, M. le Chevalier; I am happy to fee you,* said the Bon homme la ligne: *excuse me if I do not make you a long compliment; my lungs are so feeble, I can scarcely speak. You must not be surprised at this; for I am 7763 years old: it is even with difficulty that I can write. I have therefore ordered my secretary to do it for me; and here is a letter, which will acquaint you with every thing I had to say to you, as well as my chancellor. I am come down from my palace on purpose to admit you into my society. I hope you will make no scruple of submitting to the ceremony of being baptized agreeable to the custom on this occasion.* M. de Bougainville received the letter, read it, and replied *à la bonne heure*. After this he saluted the daughter of the Bon-homme, and after congratulating him on his having so handsome a daughter, drew near the line, or rope, which was stretched across. The officers of the Bon-homme accompanied him to it, and the lord governor seated himself on his throne with his daughter and his chancellor.

The officers tied M. de Bougainville's left thumb on the line with a red ribband. The rest of us gathered round, viz. Mess. de Nerville, de Belcourt, l'Huillier and myself, and they tied our left thumbs with the same ribband.

The vicar with a solemn air, and with his book in his hand, approached M. de Bougainville. At the left hand of the vicar was the scepter-bearer of the lord governor; and at his left hand two cabbin boys dressed like savages; one of whom carried a plate covered with a napkin folded, to receive the tribute, which is called *ransom*, because they content themselves with pouring a small quantity of sea water on the heads of those, who ransom themselves, instead of plunging them in the sea, as is done in the punishment of ducking: the other held a bow in one hand  
and



and a censer in the other. The censer was a piece of wood, hollowed in the shape of a porringer, with three handles, and suspended by three pieces of cord. The custom of dipping in the sea in performing this ceremony of baptism is abolished: it having been considered that that practice might be attended with much danger on account of the sharks, which are apt to lurk near the ships, and carry away a thigh at least from any unfortunate person, whom they happen to seize. In lieu of this, they have substituted the baptism of the bath, or bathing tub, on the edge of which they cause the person to sit, who has not ransomed himself, or whom they have a mind to plague, as will be seen in the progress of this account.

Things being thus settled, the vicar addressed himself to M. de Bougainville in the following manner: "In order to be admitted into the noble and puissant society of the lord governor of the line, it is necessary to enter into certain preliminary engagements, which you will promise to observe. These engagements have nothing for their object but what is entirely reasonable." "A la bonne heure," replied M. de Bougainville. "Do you then promise," pursued the vicar, "to be a good citizen, and to that end to labour at the work of population, and not to suffer young women to languish away their time, whenever a favourable opportunity shall offer itself?—I do promise.—Do you promise never to lye with a sailor's wife?—I do promise.—Do you promise to cause the same engagements to be taken, and the same, or similar ceremonies to be observed by all those who have not passed the line, when they happen to be with you?—I do promise.—Put your hand then upon this holy book in token of your obligation." M. de Bougainville laid his hand on a cut, which represents a genius or angel and a young girl tenderly embracing each other. It is the cut at the 47th page of a book intitled, *Sentimens d'un Chretien, touché de l'amour de Dieu*. At the bottom of the cut is this sentence: *quis mihi det te fratrem meum fugentem ubera matris meæ & inveniam te foris & deosculer te.* Cant. 8. The vicar went to the lord governor of the line, and reported

reported to him that M. de Bougainville had taken the engagements: to which the Bon-homme answered: *dignus est intrare in nostro docto corpore: admittatur.* The vicar then returned to M. de Bougainville and said; the lord governor of the line is pleased to admit you into the society of which he is the head, and has ordered me to receive you therein by administration of his baptism. What is your name? Louis, said M. de Bougainville. Very well; *ego, nomine reverendissimi domini domini & serenissimi præsidentis æquatoris te, Ludovice, admitto in societate ejus.* In pronouncing these words, he sprinkled over his head some drops of sea water. Then they untied M. de Bougainville's thumb, who put some money in the plate under the napkin, and the vicar threw incense on him. After this the vicar proceeded to M. de Nerville, to whom he proposed the same questions, and after him to the other passengers and officers with all the same ceremonies.

It was now come to the turn of a midshipman, who was a sad dog, and hated by almost every body. The vicar told him, that the lord governor had given orders for his being admitted with all the ceremonies in form. In consequence of these orders, he threw one end of his robe over the fellow's head, muttered a few words, and afterwards gave him the robe, which had been fresh painted in oil, to kiss. He then took some blacking, mixed with oil, in a small pot born by one of the cabin boys, and smeared his forehead and cheeks with it. This being performed they untied his thumb from the line, and conducted him to the bath, on the sides of which were two notches large enough to receive a stick, that was laid across, and was to serve as a seat for him. He had no sooner sat down, than they suddenly withdrew the stick from under him, and he fell with his posteriors into the water, the tub being about half full, to which there was a cord likewise adjusted in such a manner, that by pulling one end of it, at the instant the catechumen tumbles in, it fastens round his middle, and keeps him under, without his being able to disengage himself, till the by-standers are pleased to



to give him his liberty. As soon as the midshipman was noosed, they smeared his head and face all over with black and red: after that they threw at least five or six buckets of water over his head, and then suffered him to go about his business.

After this they came to the two Acadian girls. The vicar asked them, if they were virgins? they said, Yes. Do you promise then, said he, to preserve your marriage vow inviolable, in case you shall have a sailor for your husband? The promise being made, he just marked their foreheads, noses, cheeks, and chins with black, in the slightest manner possible, and then poured some water over their heads, after which they retired. The sister of one of these had hid herself in order to avoid this wetting. She was found however, and they were going to oblige her to submit to the ceremony; but the vicar being apprized, that there were reasons, why she should not be exposed to that part of it, which was to be performed with the water, told her, that he would content himself with making some patches upon her face. She submitted to this, and he kept his word. The two married women were not baptized, because their children, who were too young to be left by themselves, were so affrighted at the grotesque figures of the attendants on the *Bon-homme la ligne*, that they could not be pacified or brought out from the corners where they had hid themselves.

Several others were afterwards baptized and bedaubed with black and red, but none of them were seated on the tub; because when the others had begun to throw some buckets of water over them, they, to be even with them, returned the compliment. Those who had been wetted, chose to wet others: the struggle was who should throw most water, so that all those who remained on the deck were as wet, as if they had been dipped in the sea. But they were not satisfied with sluicing one another; those who had had their faces blacked rubbed them against others who had not undergone that ceremony, and by this means there was scarce a man in the whole ship's company who escaped a daubing; and they did not give over the sport, till they

they were all tired. This proved an unlucky circumstance for the Bon-homme and his attendants, who lost part of the tribute they would have received from those, who were not baptized with the ordinary ceremonies. The rest of the day was passed in dancing, and other kind of amusements.

This farce is performed in every European ship on passing the line. But there is no precise uniformity observed in the ceremonies used upon this occasion. Each nation has invented such as are most conformable to its genius and character; and every ship is regulated according to the degrees of humour in those who happen to preside. Sometimes the person, whose office it is to administer the baptism, gives each person a name taken from some bay, some cape, or some remarkable promontory on an island or coast; taking care at the same time to apply them in such a manner as to express the character, temper, figure or disposition of the person so named. The ceremony is in general called the *baptism*, or the *ransom*: the baptism, because of the water thrown over those, who are then passing the line for the first time: the ransom, on account of the tribute, which is paid by those persons who are not willing to be wetted. The tribute is usually whatever the person, who pays it, thinks fit to give. Sometimes it is imposed by the actors themselves: however they always take care to make their levy proportionable to the circumstances of the persons, from whom the tribute is exacted. Thus it is not always required in money, but sometimes in wine, or brandy, or hams, or such like; as when the captain of the vessel, who is not exempt any more than his passengers, passes the line for the first time.

When the ship is not to pass the line, but only the tropic, those of the crew, who have already passed it, not being willing to lose the tribute, which they look upon as their due, have taken it into their heads to call the tropic, the *eldest son of the Bon-homme la ligne, presumptive heir of his possessions*. Upon the strength of this they play the same farce at passing the tropic, that others do on passing the equator. They have even thought



fit to perform this ceremony, when a ship for the first time doubles Cape St. Vincent to pass the Straits of Gibraltar. The ships which are employed on the cod fishery observe the same practice, when they come within sight of the great bank of Newfoundland.

From this time for several days we had nothing remarkable.

On the 14th, by our reckoning and observation we suspected, that the tides and currents set southward, agreeable to the remark made by the author of admiral Anson's voyage.

At eight o'clock in the evening of this day, a bird similar to that of which I have given a figure in the preceding plate, suffered himself to be caught in the hand over my cabin. We shut him up in a hen-coop.

The next morning one of our boatswains having taken him out of his place of confinement to put him upon his hand, the bird took wing and flew away. A short time after we discovered a *frigate*: this bird kept wheeling round our weather flag, and seemed to peck at it more than once. We made the same observation on the currents this day as the day before.

We found this climate much the same as that of France in the month of May, the mornings and evenings being rather cold, though we were under the torrid zone; nor did we experience any of that burning heat, which is complained of in the relations of so many persons, who have sailed through these parts. It is true that since we had passed the line, we had always had some little wind at least, had never been surprised by calms, and had been secured by the clouds from the rays of the sun. Whether it were owing to our cleanliness, or to our frigate being new we were not troubled with those insects, which are mentioned in the same accounts; nor had we to this time one person sick on board. In order to contribute to the preservation of health, every evening after supper, the sailors were set to dancing on the stern-castle. And indeed they were so disposed to jollity, that they would play at hot cockles, hunt the slipper, or any other game, that promoted exercise and encouraged mirth.



mirth. Some of them, who were naturally of a comic turn, would dress themselves up in masquerade, assuming very grotesque figures, and would pass in procession, or make their appearance in groups on the stern-castle, where they would dance minuets, cotillons, allemandes, country dances, and horn-pipes. Most of them had learned these dances, while they were prisoners of war in the ports of Great Britain. The greatest part of them had made their escape from thence at the risque of their lives, in neutral vessels, fishing boats, and even small boats, which they found means to carry off. Several of them have assured me, that the English connived at their escape, and would even bargain with the neutral vessels for their passage, or sell them boats: that some lent them cloaths to disguise them, others advanced them money, others again gave them money out of charity, and others furnished them with letters of recommendation to their friends in London, or in such ports, where they thought the prisoners might embark with the least danger. They even went farther; and in order to give them the means of living comfortably in the prisons, where they were confined, made them presents, and paid them very liberally for little toys, which some of them employed themselves in making, even to the buying of them little images of the Virgin Mary, of Saints, &c. made out of wood, and as ill shaped as may be imagined, where the artists had no other tools but their knives, and had never learned the trade. One of our crew, who had amused himself in this way, has told me more than once, that they would give him to the value of half a crown for one of his figures, with this caution only, not to boast of it among the English. A fine lesson of humanity and charity!

Mirth and cleanliness are two points, to the promotion of which sea captains ought to pay great attention. They contribute in no small degree to prevent all those disorders to which seamen are usually subject. For the same reason they ought always to mix a little vinegar with their daily allowance of water, which they put in a cask, called *charnier*. What was



used for the chamber, or served up at the officers mess was put into great earthen vessels, which were filled to the height of half a foot or more with small pebbles. After the water has been drawn off from the casks into these large vessels, called *jarrs*, which are exposed to the open air on the stern-castle or thereabouts, it is left there to purify for three or four days before it is drunk. It is imagined that the pebbles serve to clear it from slime.

I must not omit to observe here, that the water we had taken on board at St. Malo, had not suffered the least change, as it usually happens between the tropics. Our biscuit was equally well preserved. There were only some pickled cabbage, and some small casks of veal, which were rather spoiled: and that probably was more owing to a fault in the seasoning of them, than to the heat of the climate we were in.

On the 20th of November at eight in the morning we took a porpoise of about a hundred weight. I painted him from the life, but without preserving any proportion to his bulk. For the figure of him see the plate annexed.

Several writers consider the porpoise, as a species of whale, and give it the name of *sousfleur*. There are different kinds of them. Some of them have their backs of a dark grey, almost black, and their bellies much lighter. Others are of a grey approaching nearly to white, from whence they have the name of *white porpoises*. Those which we took, and whose figure is represented in the plate, had their heads formed, not like the snout of a hog, but almost in the shape of a bird's head, covered with a thick grey skin, and the beak armed throughout with sharp white teeth like those of a pike. They had an opening (A.) on the top of their head, through which they spouted water, and this was followed by a stream of air attended with a noise something like the grunting of a hog. Their tail is horizontal, contrary to what is usually found among other fish, who have it perpendicular, when they are lying upon their bellies. It is of great use, no doubt, in assisting the porpoise to spring out of the water,

water, and to turn round in the air with so much ease, as I have mentioned in a former article ; to effect which they only incline a little more on one side of their tail than on the other. From this position of their tail probably it is, that they derive that peculiar method of swimming, as if they were alternately rising above the water and diving under it. The porpoise, which I am describing here (and all those we took were of the same kind) is, as I apprehend, of that species, which are called *moines de mer*. The fore part of the head terminates in a roll near the beginning of the snout or beak, answering to the border of the cowl. The back is blackish, and the belly of a grey, consisting of a pearl colour, somewhat inclining to yellow, interspersed with black and iron-grey spots. It has three fins, curved and very thick; one on the back, the other two under the belly. These, as well as the tail, are covered with a membrane, or thick coarse skin, which being removed, five white cartilages appear, disposed like fingers and articulated in phalanxes.

I dissected the head and fins with an intention of preserving them ; but having hung them up over our cabbins near the flag staff, some of our crew, in working the ship, inadvertently threw them overboard.

Porpoises almost always are found in shoals, swimming in a line, as if they were drawn up for an engagement. They seem to go in search of the wind; for we remarked that in a short time after they had passed us, the wind would rise on that side, to which they directed their course. There is no fish perhaps, considering its size, that has so much strength as the porpoise. Among those, which we struck, two or three disengaged themselves from the harpoon, either by tearing their backs or breaking the harpoon itself; although the spike was as thick as a man's thumb. Those we took did always force the iron, and one of them twisted it like the end of a screw. There is a strong smell attending this fish, as well as the shark, and it is so permanent, that after the dissection I made, my hands were not free from it in three days, though I washed them very often with vinegar.

We



We had some of it served up at dinner the day it was taken, which several others at the table, besides myself, thought by no means so ill tasted, as it is generally said to be.

Perceiving a change in the colour of the sea, we thought proper to sound; a precaution the more necessary in the latitudes we were in at this time, as there is very little dependence on the charts. Those of Holland placing the coast of Brazil near 60 leagues more to the East than the French. Besides, according to our reckoning and our observations of the sun's altitude, we found ourselves among, or at least very near the shelves called Los Abrollhos, the extent and situation of which are not so exactly known and laid down in the charts, that they can safely be trusted to.

About half past seven in the evening, we sounded with a hundred and thirty-five fathom of line, but found no bottom. Immediately after, another of those birds, of which I have exhibited a figure, and which I take to be one of those they call *tropical birds*, came and settled on the larboard of the quarter-deck. Here we endeavoured to catch him but he escaped. He then flew to the other end of the ship, and settling on the larboard of the fore-castle, a sailor caught him in his hand. We put him in a hen coop, intending the next morning to fasten a ribband round his neck with this inscription: *I was taken on the French frigate, Eagle, the 20th of November 1763, in 16 deg. 44 min. lat. 35 deg. 10 min. long. and was set at liberty the 21st in the morning.* At midnight we sounded a second time without finding any bottom.

Tuesday the 21st, at half past six in the morning, one of the mates being desirous of examining the bird, which had been taken the evening before, and not holding him with sufficient caution, our prisoner escaped, and deprived us of the pleasure we proposed to ourselves in fastening about him the ribband I have mentioned. From the time we had suffered the second of these birds that we met with to fly away, we never failed to have

one of them every evening about eight o'clock fluttering round our cabbins.

Having observed an alteration in the colour of the sea all this day, we sounded at eight in the evening. At the depth of 35 fathoms we found bottom, and brought up pieces of coral, shells, and rotten stone. At ten we sounded again, and found 30 fathom with the same bottom. At midnight, no soundings.

At two in the morning of the 22d, sounded again; 40 fathom, same bottom as before. At four, no soundings. The Abrollhos extend farther to the southward than is marked in the French chart.

It is to be observed, that the author of admiral Anson's voyage, being in the same latitude and longitude according to our reckoning, found the same soundings, which served in some measure as a direction for us. This successive difference, of soundings and no soundings, is the more remarkable, as by our reckoning we had not changed our course half a league; for from noon the day before we steered S. W. by the compass, till three quarters past seven, when we sounded: after that S.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. W. till ten, then S. till midnight, when we came about again to S. S. W. after having made two leagues two thirds of way; at two we had soundings, and at four, steering the same course at the rate of five or five  $\frac{1}{2}$  knots an hour, no soundings.

At noon we observed the sun in our zenith, and could not miss finding the altitude. Some minutes after we remarked that we had passed the sun, and that our shadow lay southward.

About three in the afternoon we made a signal to a sail, we had had in view for some hours, thinking it to be our sloop the Sphinx. She seemed to be making towards us, and was steering W. S. W. upon this we lay by for her; but finding that she did not answer our signal, and having discovered that she had but two masts, we concluded her to be a negro snow going to Rio Janeiro. We kept S. W. before the wind till nine at night, when we changed our course to S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. At midnight we sounded without finding bottom.



At four the next morning, 23d of November, we steered S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  W. and at six had sight of the coast of Brazil, bearing W. and W. N. W. about fifteen leagues distance. At seven we came about to the wind in order to make the land; but the weather grew so hazy, that by ten o'clock we had lost sight of it. The colour of the sea changing, we sounded, and found a bottom of fine sand at fifteen fathom depth. At eleven we sounded again, and found the same bottom.

In measuring our distance upon the chart, according to our corrected longitude, we found ourselves seventy leagues from the coast of Brazil, East and West of the southern point of the river Spirito Santo. At the same time we had sight of land, and found ourselves sixty leagues farther West than our reckoning; which confirms the remark of the author of admiral Anson's voyage, that the tides set South West. It is therefore very prudent not to trust to these tides, nor to the charts, especially the French ones, in the passage from the line to the river Plata.

Our first sounding might probably have been taken on a bank of sand in the open sea, not marked out in the French chart, which is to be found in the Dutch chart of Wan-Culen, marked *good bottom*, at 15 or 16 leagues off land. This is the same place where we sounded at ten and eleven o'clock. The chart of Peter Goos is more accurate; and one of M. Buache is still better.

After this the wind changing from N. N. E. to N. E. with a brisk gale, hazy weather, and a high sea, we sounded every quarter of an hour, and at three o'clock finding only nine fathom, we tacked, and put the Cape S.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. W. Our depth still decreasing, we came again to S.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. E. for half an hour; but finding that our water grew still more shallow, though we were standing out to sea, we put about again, and brought the Cape to bear S. S. W. From this time the depth began gradually to increase, insomuch, that at five o'clock we had twenty-five fathom water with the same sandy bottom of the colour of bran, but something more muddy than at the top of the bank. At eight we stood cross it, in 35 fathom, with a bottom of white shining sand. At

ten we had forty fathom, with a bottom of rotten shells, and some coral.

Although this last sounding had almost removed the apprehensions we laboured under, through the error of the charts, in respect to the situation of the coast of Brazil, and the omission of this sand bank or shallow we had just met with, we thought it necessary to continue our soundings for the greater security. In consequence of this resolution, we found at midnight fifty fathom water, same bottom, but no coral: at four in the morning, being the 24th, sixty fathom, same bottom as the last. From half past five we steered S. W. till noon. These shallows are the flats of St. Thomas, which are very dangerous in stormy weather. They lie from sixteen to seventeen leagues out at sea, and the highest part of the shoal is not more than three or four fathoms below the surface of the water. Near the shore there is depth enough to pass. The Portuguese vessels, which are employed in coasting along these shores, and are well acquainted with them, keep between these flats and the land, but several of them have not been able to avoid running foul of the bank.

The ground between these flats and the shore is composed of sand, which resembles pounded glass, and that on the shoal itself is of rotten stone.

It is proper to observe, that the Dutch chart, of which I have spoken above, does not make the sand bank, marked *good bottom*, extend so far as it really does, which is not less than through the 24th degree of latitude. I am not acquainted with the extent of it from East to West. By our reckoning and observations of this day it appears, that the tides and the currents set southward and westward. At six o'clock the night before, Cape St. Thomas bore nearly North West of us by the compass, at the distance of fourteen or fifteen leagues.

The wind continued N. N. E. blowing hard, the sky gloomy and covered. We steered with the Cape S. W. till six in the morning of the 25th. After that W. S. W. At seven, the even-



ing before, we had founded, and found no bottom with fourscore fathom of line.

On the 26th, from four in the morning to six, we were becalmed. We took this opportunity to found, but found no bottom. At ten in the evening we founded again, with the same success. At midnight we found a bottom of grey sand at the depth of 90 fathom.

At two the next morning (27th) our soundings were 85 fathom, with a bottom of grey sand somewhat slimy.

At sun set, though the horizon was not very clear, we saw land a head of us. We kept on our course, founding at seven in the evening, when we found thirty-five fathom, soft muddy ground, of a blackish grey colour, mixed with some small shells. At midnight we founded again, at which time we had thirty-one fathom, same bottom.

The 28th at sun rise the land began to open upon us. We made towards it in order to take a view. At eight o'clock I discovered a small island called in some charts *Aracari*. It bore N. W. 5 degrees W. of us by the compass, at the distance of about five or six leagues. The nearest point to us, as far as I could distinguish at this time, was that which runs out farthest to the East on this side, and forms a peninsula. It bore W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. W. of us by the compass, at the distance of about three leagues.

On the 29th, after having with much difficulty weathered the point of the island of *Gal*, and that of St. Catherine's, we came about four in the afternoon to anchor in six fathom water, muddy ground and very soft.

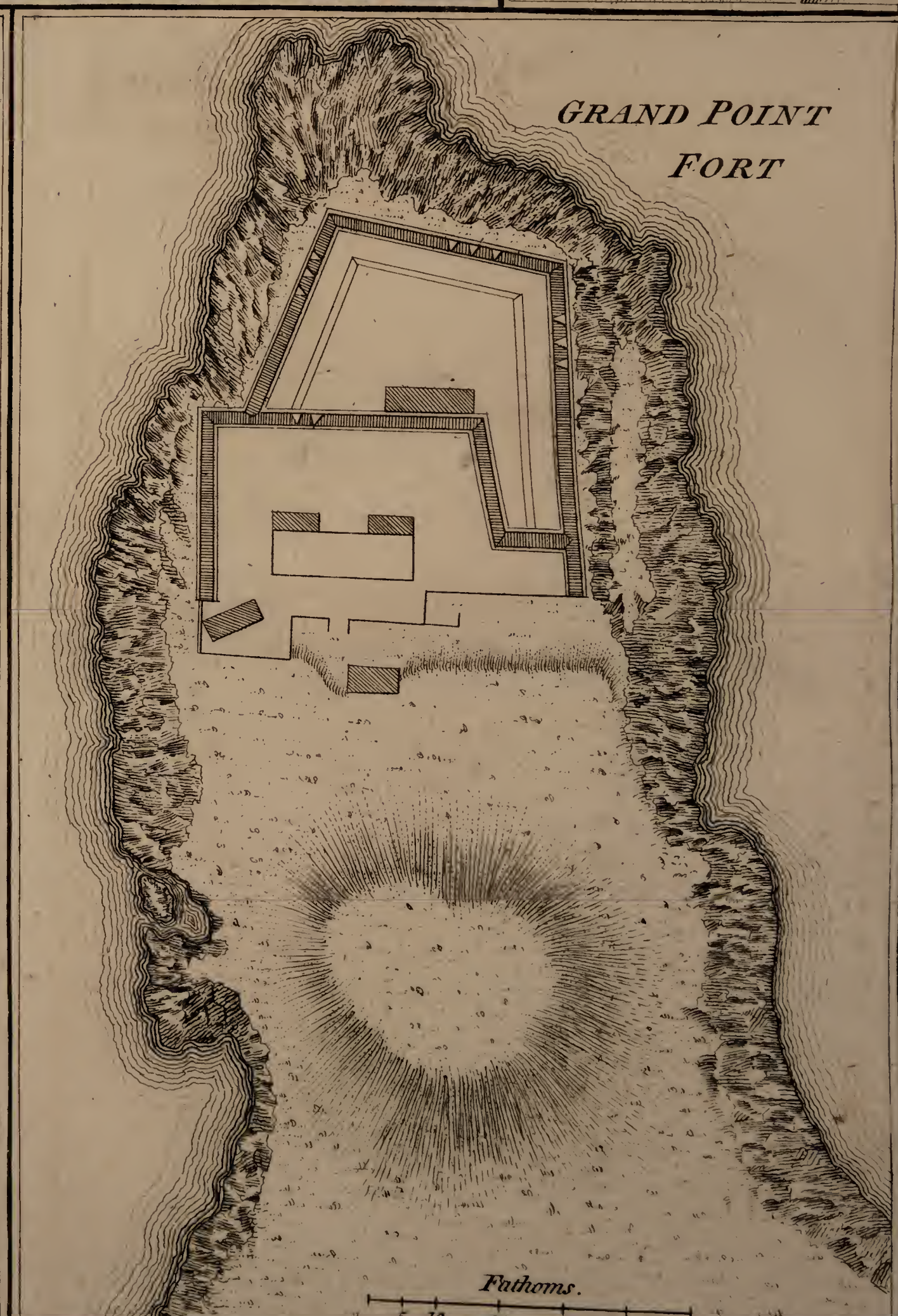
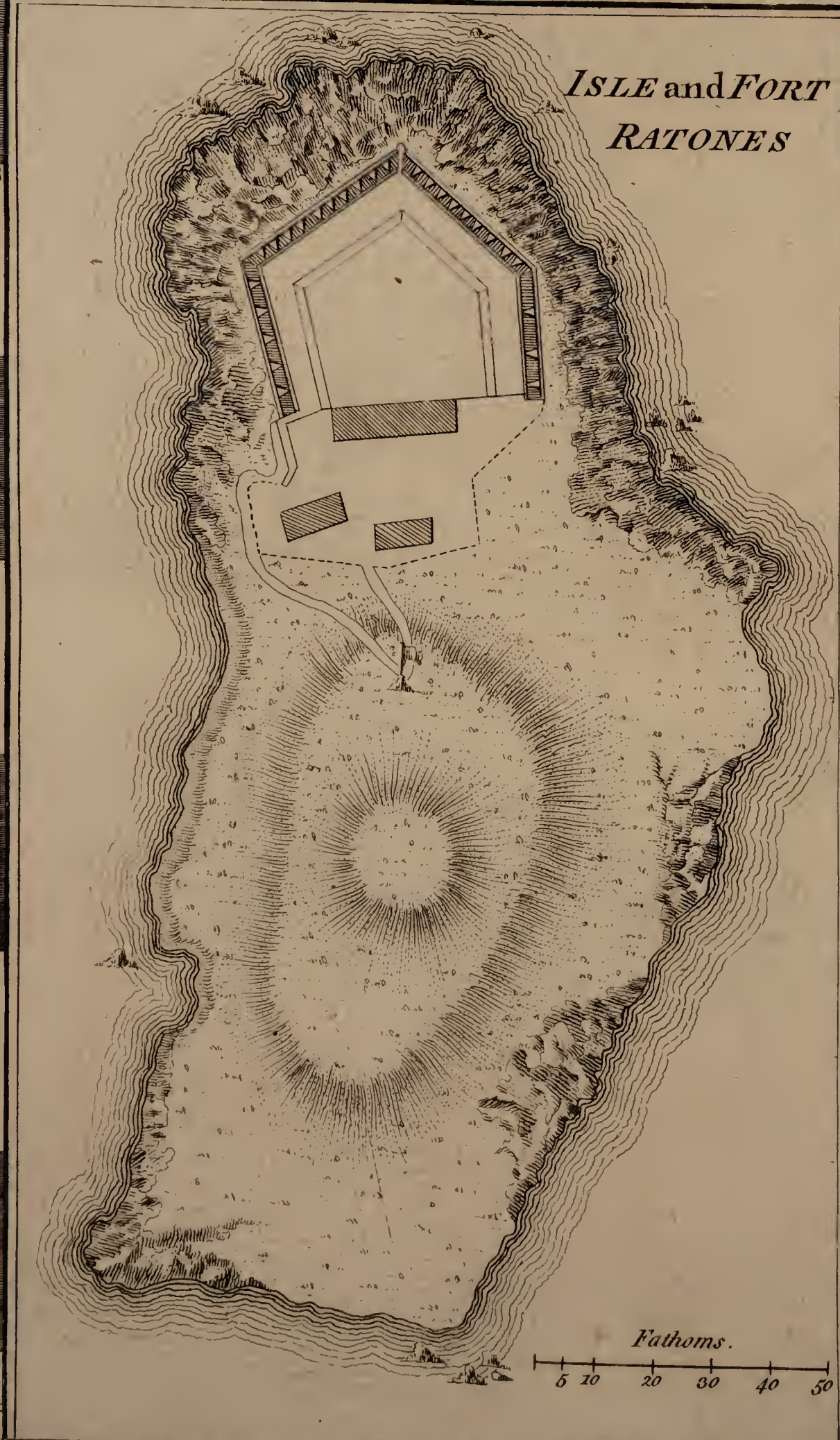
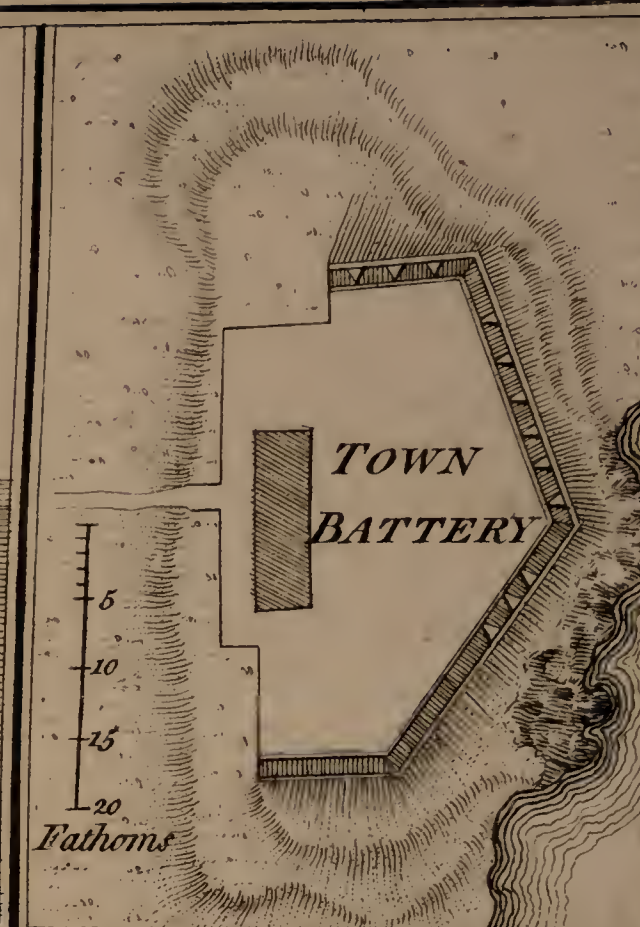
*Marks of Anchorage.*

Moored South South East, and North North West.

In this bay, which forms a canal round the island of St. Catherine's, are three forts, and a battery of cannon near the entrance towards the town, on that side where we anchored. The first fort stands on the larboard side on coming into the bay. It is situated on a head-land in a small island, called Parrot Island, N. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  E. and E. N. E. The name of it is *the Grand-Point-Port*.









*Fort.* Almost opposite to this, but a little farther, is the second fort, built likewise upon a little island near the main-land N. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. by the compass. This is called, *the fort of Santa-Cruz*. It makes a good appearance on entering the bay, being built on a terrace supported by arches. Here the commanding officer resides. The third fort, which stands more in towards the town, is also situated on a small island at almost an equal distance from the continent and the island, and goes by the name of *the fort of Ratonne*. Plans of all these forts are in the plate annexed. We lay at anchor in the middle of them, and the commanding officer gave us to understand by signals, that this was the best anchorage: but he had his reasons for doing so, there being much more commodious anchorage farther in towards the main-land.

Upon our coming into the bay, we perceived the Portuguese colours hoisted at the top of some trees on an eminence in the island in the midst of the woods, and placed so that it might be seen by the two advanced forts. They hoist this flag without doubt, as soon as they discover any ship at sea, to give notice of it to the forts in the bay; for we saw it set up, and afterwards taken down again, as soon as we had come to an anchor and saluted the fort of Santa Cruz.

Before we moored, being over against this fort, which as well as the two others had hung out Portuguese colours, we sent our yawl with M. Alexander Guyot, our second captain, who understands Portuguese, to wait upon the commanding officer, and to ask him, if upon our saluting the fort, he would return our salute, gun for gun. The Commandant sent an officer of the garrison back with M. Guyot to return the compliment, and to see who we were. As soon as they came on board, we cast our anchors, and saluted the fort with nine guns, which was returned with the same number. The officer supped, and lay on board our ship that night, in order to conduct M. Guyot the next morning to wait upon the governor of this part of Brazil, who resides at a little town, situated in the bottom of a creek in the



island of St. Catherine's, five leagues South of our moorings, and to desire his permission, that we might wood and water. The same evening, the commanding officer of the fort of Santa Cruz, sent us some refreshments, and the next morning M. Guyot went with the Portuguese Officer in the longboat.

The governor, whose name is Don Antonio Francisco de Cardoso y Menezes y Souza, colonel and knight of the order of Christ, and descended from a very illustrious family in Portugal, gave a very polite reception to M. Guyot, and granted every thing we desired. Our longboat left the town about nine in the morning to return to us, but did not get back till seven in the evening, being detained by contrary winds.

As soon as the inhabitants on the coast perceived our frigate at anchor, three or four of them came along side of us in canoes, and brought us lemons, oranges, and some cabbages. But the commanding officer of the fort of Santa Cruz, observing this, sent orders to all the huts forbidding the people to carry any thing on board our frigate, or even to come near it; they were neither to sell us any thing or buy any thing of us. To enforce his orders more strictly, he posted soldiers in the nearest huts, who were to watch the conduct of the inhabitants in this respect, and to prevent our straggling about the parts adjacent. In the mean time he made us a thousand protestations of his readiness to oblige us, and was not at all sparing of his civilities.

It is not to be doubted, that the Commandant immediately upon our arrival, dispatched a canoe to the governor to give him intelligence of it. The next morning, while M. Guyot was gone to wait upon the governor, the Oviodore, or chief judge came on board our frigate to make a verbal process of our anchorage, our force, and the reasons which brought us hither. M. de Bougainville satisfied him in all these points, and he returned about noon. At his leaving the ship we saluted him with seven guns, which were immediately returned by the fort of Santa Cruz.

After

After dinner M. de Bougainville, accompanied by Mess. de Nerville, de Belcourt, and l'Huillier de la Serre, went to visit the Commandant of this fort. Here they found a general officer of Rio Janeiro, who had been confined prisoner in it for four years, the commanding officer having received orders, never to suffer him to stir out of the gates. The crime laid to his charge was, that he had not punctually executed the orders of the court of Lisbon, in respect to the expulsion of the Jesuits of Brazil, and had extended some favor to them. This gentleman had with him a Portuguese, who acted as his steward and secretary; he was a man of good sense and had been page to one of the Portuguese ambassadors at Paris, where he had lived four years. The pleasure of seeing Frenchmen again delighted him, and he was happy in serving as an interpreter to M. de Bougainville. His attachment to the imprisoned general had induced him to sacrifice his liberty, and for the sake of bearing him company he voluntarily partook of his confinement. This secretary accompanied M. de Bougainville, and the rest on their return. In the account he gave us of the causes of the general's imprisonment, he exculpated him as much as he could, and told us even in the presence of two officers, who had come on board with him, that he was indeed guilty of not having carried the orders of his court into execution as soon as he received them; but that the archbishop, who favored the Jesuits had prevented it by giving him assurances that he had received counter orders; and that the other, as commanding officer, ought not to obey those he had received, till they should be confirmed. The execution therefore of them, whether out of respect to the archbishop or from other motives not known, was delayed too long, and the general was punished for it by the loss of his liberty. After this relation he begged of M. de Bougainville to take charge of a memorial in justification of the prisoner, and to deliver it to the Portuguese ambassador in France upon our return, that it might be transmitted to the court of Lisbon. But no such paper, I believe, ever came to the hands of M. de Bougainville.

When



When M. Alexander Guyot paid his visit to the governor, he received an invitation from him, and was likewise desired to deliver one on his part to M. de Bougainville and the Officers as well as the principal passengers on board our frigate to dine with the governor the next day, Thursday the first of December.

As soon as it was light we set off, M. de Bougainville, de Nerville, de Belcourt, l' Huillier, Alex. Guyot and myself; and at half past one we arrived at the town, the name of which translated into French is, *Notre Dame de l'Exil*, or *la Vierge Exilée*, *Our Lady in Exile*.

Almost all the officers of the garrison came down to the shore to meet us. They received us at our landing with all the politeness imaginable, and conducted us to the governor's house through a large concourse of people.

The governor met us at the outer gate, and led us into a large salloon, where we found dinner served up. The governor, his son, who talked pretty good French, the town major, who knew enough of it to make himself understood, the Oviodore, two other officers and a friar of the Franciscan order dined with us. Many other officers of the garrison were in the room, but did not sit down at table, and some of them waited upon us. These military *waiters*, according to the account of an officer of the garrison of Fort Santa Cruz, take that method to pay their court to the governor, who invites them all in their turns to dinner, and they wait upon one another.

The dishes were dressed after the manner of the country, which is not very agreeable to a French palate. In eating their soup, which is a kind of solid glue, they do not make use of spoons, but eat it with the help of a fork. The bread was miserable, brown, heavy dough, or rather paste made in the shape of a roll, about three inches diameter, and an inch and a half in height. The outside had scarcely felt the fire, and was only a little drier than the rest. The inside was solid, and looked like that buck-wheat flummery, which is the chief food of the inhabitants of Limoges, and is by them called *Galette*.

The

The second course was composed of a great number of dishes, all dressed with sugar, which is also an ingredient in most of their sauces, as well as Carthamum, or the flower of bastard saffron. The plates were pewter, not well scowered, and of an antique form. The covers were likewise very old fashioned, but they were silver, and very heavy; so were the dishes, and some drinking vessels, which were of an octagonal cylindrical form, and about seven or eight inches high. Our liquor was at first brought to us in very small glasses, such as were formerly used for *liqueurs*, having a long stem, and the bowl ending in a point. But as it would have been necessary to drink one of these glasses at least with every mouthful, I asked for a larger to mix wine and water in. Upon this they brought me one of the silver cylinders full. Another time I had a large goblet of crystal, the only one that appeared, and which held near a bottle, Paris measure. The other guests were served in the same manner. These great cups were handed from one to another, till they were empty. The wine we drank was port, and very good.

After dinner the cloth was removed, but we continued at table to drink coffee and to converse. At this time I perceived that the Franciscan had quitted the company. My design had been to address myself to him in order to obtain some knowledge of the country and inhabitants; for though he knew nothing of the French language, nor I of the Portuguese, I made myself sure of being able to converse with him in Latin. I acquainted the governor's son with my intention, and asked him why the Franciscan had retired. He told me, I might have perceived from the moment we came in, that the Friar had taken pains to avoid me, foreseeing my design; for not understanding Latin, he chose rather to keep at a distance from me, than be obliged to acknowledge his ignorance of that language. This want of learning, however, says he, is not peculiar to him; it is the case of almost all the ecclesiastics in the country.

The governor's son, from whom I received this intelligence is a captain in his father's regiment, and one of fifteen children.



as he informed us, that he had had, not by his lawful wife, for he never was married, but by one or several mistresses. The rest of his children then alive were at Lisbon, where they enjoy according to the laws of that city the same honours and prerogatives as the legitimate children of nobility; bastards being there, as I am informed, gentlemen by birth. One of the daughters of this governor is married to one of the ministers of State in that court, and another of his sons is in possession of one of the first employments.

While the coffee was pouring, a dozen of the officers of the garrison came in, and entertained us with a little concert of instrumental music; some playing on the German flute, some on the violin, one on the violoncello, and one on a species of haut-bois. The same persons played successively on different instruments. There were besides two blacks, who blew the French horn. The whole performance was very good. They had almost all the pieces of our best composers. The treble string of their violins was made of silk.

After this we walked about the town, which appeared to me to contain about a hundred and fifty houses, consisting of nothing but a ground floor with the roof over it. The garrison occupies one part, and is composed chiefly of white men. The rest of the inhabitants are almost all negroes or mulattoes; they are to be found of all shades from black to white. The greatest number of both sexes are mulattoes, and for the most part ill-shaped. They have besides an air of savageness, such as might be expected in a breed half Brazilian and half negro.

They go almost all of them with their feet naked, their head bare and very ill combed, a shirt, a pair of breeches, and some with a cloke, which they throw over their shoulder according to the Spanish fashion. It is common enough to see their shirts and breeches in holes, and torn in more places than one; which makes the cloke very necessary. One meets with some, but they are undoubtedly of the richer sort, who wear hats of a very large size, the brims being about ten inches in breadth, and flapped down.

down. These have their feet covered ; they have likewise a waistcoat, over which they throw an exceeding wide full cloak, which comes down to their shoes : they sometimes throw a corner of it over the opposite shoulder, and that in such a manner as even to cover their faces. Instead of a hat some of them have a hood of the same stuff as the cloak, to which it is fastened, and with this they are used to cover their heads so completely, that it is impossible to know any person in that garb, unless by their walk, or some other mark of distinction, such as the colour of the cloak or the manner of wearing it.

The governor, and the officers, as well as the whole garrison, wear cloth made up in the French fashion : and indeed I was very much surpris'd to see officers in so hot a country dressed in cloth at least as coarse as that of our soldiers.

The Oviodore, and officers of justice are distinguished by a large cane or staff, or by a small stick, bent in form of a hoop, which the principal of them carry on their left arm above the elbow ; the inferior ones have it fastened to the button hole of the left pocket of their coat.

The slaves go naked, except that the men have a pair of breeches or drawers, and sometimes a shirt, that is scarcely good for any thing : it often happens indeed that they have no other covering than a simple piece of cloth about their shoulders. It is very uncommon to see any of them with a shirt and waistcoat. But when they have obtained their liberty, they are permitted to wear the doublet and cloak made of stuff like the white people. The black female slaves are also naked, excepting a slip of linen which they tie round them by the two ends, and which reaches from their waist to the middle of their thighs at most. When they are made free, they are dressed like other women with a petticoat, and a shift, the upper part of which is open before, a good deal in the manner of our shirts : when they go out of doors, they put on a large piece of fine woollen, generally of a white colour, bordered with gold, silver, silk, or tape, according to the circumstances and condition of the wearer. It is about



two ells in length, and one in breadth. It is put on so that one of the corners hangs down to the middle of the back, and in this respect bears a pretty near resemblance to the cowl worn by our Carmelites. The opposite corner comes over the head, and the two others being drawn over the shoulders and arms down to the elbows, are brought across each other upon the breast, like the mantlet of our French ladies. Sometimes too, instead of crossing them upon the breast, they bring these ends under their arms on the same side, by which means their neck is left exposed to view. This mode of dress is very inconvenient, and requires a continual attention to re-adjust it, sometimes on the head, and sometimes on the arms, the slightest motion of the body putting it out of order.

The Portuguese women, who are established or born on the island of St. Catherine's, and on the coast of the main land so far as our excursions led us, are of a very fair complexion, notwithstanding the heat of the climate. They have, generally speaking, fine large eyes; but little colour in their cheeks. Both men and women for the most part lead a very lazy life, and trust to their slaves the management of their household affairs, and what little work is to be done out of doors. The land produces almost every kind of necessary, without their taking the trouble to cultivate it.

There are scarce any shops to be seen in the town. I found only two; one a locksmith's, and the other an apothecary's. The negro women, who have obtained their liberty, carry fruit about in great baskets on their heads, or squat down at the corners of streets with their baskets before them.

While we were agreeably engaged in attending to the music, his excellency the governor ordered a parrot to be fetched, which was exceedingly remarkable for its beautiful and variegated plumage. As he saw that we all of us admired it, he begged M. de Bougainville to accept of the parrot. Its whole plumage, particularly on the head, neck, back, and belly was adorned with feathers, some of a jonquil, others of a lemon colour, some carmine,

mine; others crimson, and all intermixed with feathers of different shades of green, and of a lively blue, particularly at the ears. The governor told us, that this variety was partly owing to art, and partly to nature: for that when this bird is very young, and has scarcely more than the quills of the feathers rising after the down, these quills are pulled out in different parts, and a kind of poisonous liquid poured immediately into the place of them; that the feathers, which rise afterwards where the quills have been pulled out, are yellow or red instead of green; which they would naturally be: but of a hundred birds, on which this operation is performed, there are scarce five or six, that do not die of it.

The governor added to this present fifty skins of toucans, stripped from the beak to the thighs, and dried with the feathers, which are partly lemon colour, partly carnation, and partly black, in cross streaks from one wing to the other.

He carried his generosity so far, as to promise M. de Bougainville two guaras alive, a male and a female; and even offered to make him a present of those which he shewed us, if there were no others to be got before our departure from the island. He could not however accomplish his promise, a contrary wind preventing his return to the town the evening before we sailed.

The guara is a bird of the size of a large French magpye. It has a long beak, which is crooked at the end; its thighs and feet are also long. The first feathers, with which it is covered after it is hatched, are black. This goes off insensibly, and becomes an ash colour. When the bird begins to fly, all these feathers turn white; after which they become of a rose colour, and growing more and more red every day, at last attain to the brightest scarlet, which they preserve ever after. Though it is a bird of prey, feeding not only on fish but on all kinds of flesh, which it usually soaks first in water; yet it builds and lays its



eggs on the roofs of houses, and in holes of walls, as our sparrows do. It always flies in company. The feathers, with which the savages adorn their heads, are taken from these birds. The two which the governor had promised to M. de Bougainville were just beginning to redden.

On Friday the 2d of December the Acadians with their wives, children and sisters-in-law, were set on shore, and lodged in a cottage on the continent, which had been assigned them by the Commandant of the fort of Santa Cruz. Here they were employed in washing the linen of the vessel, and of several officers of the frigate.

The Commandant had pointed out to us a place near his fort to wood and water at. Some of the crew were sent there for these purposes; but after several trials, they found much difficulty in getting this water, which ran from a little torrent. Beside this, a small whale having run a ground near the place some time before infected the air with so horrible a stench, that it was resolved to ask leave of the governor to water on the island. Our request was granted with the greatest politeness, his excellency giving us at the same time permission to fish, sport, and to go wherever we pleased. One of the inhabitants shewed us a spring near his house which formed a little rivulet, where Admiral Anson had watered, and an oven built a few paces from it about seven or eight years before by some Frenchmen, who had put into the harbour. The water of this spring is very good; and we laid in a large stock of it. As to our wood, we got that from the place which had been mentioned to us on the continent, it being exceedingly commodious for that purpose: for after cutting down the wood on the brow of the hill, it was very easy to roll it down the side close to the water edge, and so load our boats with it. What we cut was mostly cedar, sassafras, cinnamon, and Brazil wood, which is used in dying. There was very little of any other kind in this place.

The

The next day (Saturday the 3d) we went on shore upon the continent, and walked along the coast with an intention of sporting. We found two or three soldiers posted by the Commandant in the next cottage to that of our Acadians, who endeavoured to prevent us from going forward, and told us they had orders from the governor to do so. We pretended not to understand what they said to us, as they spoke in Portuguese, and continued our route, upon which they made no resistance. In fact, it was not the governor, but the Commandant of the fort of Santa Cruz, who had given these orders. We proceeded above a league along the new road, which they are making to go by land to Rio Janeiro, and by the side of a chain of woods which cover all the eminences. These woods are so thick, that it is not possible for any thing but wild beasts and serpents to penetrate into them. We killed some toucans, parrots, tiepirangas, and one dove.

Sunday the 4th, M. de Bougainville accompanied by four or five officers went to dine with the governor, who had given us an invitation the Thursday before. I remained on board to say mass to the crew. The gentlemen who went were received and entertained splendidly as before. The wind and tide being against them hindered their returning to the ship that day, notwithstanding all their endeavours to accomplish it; they resolved therefore to go back again to the town. The governor had apprized them of the impossibility of their getting on board at that time, and had done every thing in his power to engage them to stay. He represented to them, the risque they must run by exposing themselves in such a manner to the dangers of a channel full of shallows, banks of sand, and rocks, which they would have the greatest difficulty in the world to avoid, if the night should come upon them before they reached the ship; that such an accident would put it entirely out of their power to discover the *sea marks*, and consequently to keep the channel. Besides, he had intended to give them the pleasure of a ball; and had already invited several ladies, wives to officers of the garrison.



The party being broke up by the departure of our gentlemen, he sent to all the persons who had been invited, to prevent their coming. But as soon as he understood that M. de Bougainville, and his companions were coming back to the town, he sent out to meet them, and without acquainting them of his intentions, dispatched fresh invitations for the supper and the ball, which was to follow.

After supper was over, at which the ladies were not present, the governor, without giving our gentlemen the least hint of what they were to expect, engaged them only to go and pass a few hours at the house of an officer of the garrison, where, as he said, they would find a very agreeable company. M. de Bougainville and the rest consented at first merely out of complaisance, but they were agreeably surpris'd to find there several ladies, by whom they were perfectly well received. They had never imagined from the reputation the Portuguese have of being extremely susceptible of jealousy, that they would have permitted their women to appear in such assemblies. They struck up however a kind of dance, in which the ladies figur'd as well as the gentlemen, and about two or three in the morning they retired very well satisfied with each other.

At this interview, M. de Bougainville took an opportunity of complaining to the governor of the behaviour of the Commandant of Santa Cruz, and obtained a general permission to take whatever measures he should judge proper for sporting, fishing, wooding, and watering wherever we pleas'd. At parting M. de Bougainville invit'd the governor, with the Oviodore, and such officers as he should think fit to bring with him, to dine on board our ship.

In consequence of this permission we sent our yawl out to fish almost every day, and she constantly came back loaded with fish of many kinds, and in such abundance as to serve the whole crew. The figures of them may be seen in the plates.

We went also every day a shooting either on the continent or in the island; though we soon left off going to the former, as

we

we found scarce any thing there but parrots, toucans, and some doves. In the island, beside these birds, which I have mentioned, there were sea larks, plovers, snipes, and some others in good number. The officers of the garrison, and the people of the country, whether from want of courage, or from indolence, or from the danger of meeting with wild beasts and serpents, which are in great plenty among the woods and morasses, never go out a sporting, and advised us to follow their example. It must be confessed indeed, that the cottagers are not provided with arms; and the few which one meets with are old, the greatest part made after the old fashion, with wheels for the trigger, and very bad. They had scarcely even powder or ball.

Less timid than they, and to say the truth better armed, we more than once penetrated into the accessible parts of the island. By the assistance of our light boots we surmounted the obstacles which presented themselves to us among the woods and thickets, from a species of thorny aloes, of which they are full. We never went alone, but always two or three in a company in order to assist each other in case of an attack from any overgrown serpent, or wild beast, particularly ounces; some claws of which we had seen here in the hands of some of the inhabitants mounted in silver, and which, as we were informed by them, were very common, and were more ravenous than even tygers.

One day when we were out in search of game upon the island, and had separated into different parties, I, with M. de Belcourt and his servant, kept along the side of a creek, which runs a considerable way within the land, and was called by us *the river*. M. de Belcourt amused himself with shooting at water-fowl. As we advanced along the border of this creek I perceived on the sand recent traces of some four-footed animal, which, to judge by the marks, must be very large, and seemed to be a tyger. We followed these traces till we came to a very marshy spot, where we did not dare to venture ourselves, not knowing either the bottom or the extent of it. Returning by the same way



way that we came, I perceived M. de Belcourt advancing towards us, and shewed him the traces.

These, said he to me, must certainly be the traces of a beast I saw hereabouts but just now, at the very instant he was darting into the thickets. He is about the height of the largest sized Danish dog, and of a greyish colour. He went in at that place, let us pursue him. With all my heart, replied I. We made our way as well as we could among these marshy thickets, which were so choaked up with a sharp species of aloes, whose leaves are sometimes not less than five feet in height, that we had all the trouble in the world to disengage ourselves from them. We beat about in vain for near two hours without seeing any thing of the beast we were in pursuit of: we only got sight of the hind part of another, the hair of which seemed to be of a greenish grey: his height about that of the largest kind of spaniel: his tail seemed to be as green as the leaves of the plants, which surrounded it, and to resemble that of a fox in thickness and in length. He hid himself among the bushes at the instant M. de Belcourt was going to fire at him.

The heat was now suffocating. We stopped and sat down on the ends of some branches, leaning our backs against a tree. We had with us some oranges and some sea-biscuit. While we were regaling ourselves in this posture, we were stunned with the incessant hissings of serpents, which surrounded us, and reduced us to the necessity of keeping constantly upon our guard with drawn sabres. After this breakfast, of which we had stood in great need, we continued our sport, drawing towards an eminence, at the top of which we discovered a cottage. Being arrived here, we found M. de Bougainville and his servant. Two Portuguese women, whose figures were not very inviting, received us, and displayed for near two hours, that we continued with them, the utmost freedom in their air and conversation. They had a tame parrot, which was tolerably pretty, and talked well. We proposed to purchase this bird; but the women refused to part with it. They longed for every thing we had,  
handkerchiefs,

handkerchiefs, knives, hats, and even our fuzils and sabres: they asked us for all these without ceremony, and if we had been willing to give into their way of thinking, neither our cloaths nor even our shirts would have incommoded us on our return. We contented ourselves with a few oranges, and set out to dine on board. On entering the wood we separated again from M. de Bougainville and his servant without intending it. The path which M. de Belcourt and I took led us to a morass, where the trees were luckily at a sufficient distance from each other: Here we saw several serpents about the thickness of the small of a man's leg, and others less, some of a reddish colour, others red and yellow, and others grey, which last a good deal resembled adders of the largest size; but instead of attacking, they fled before us. When we were almost got to our boat, M. de Belcourt fired at a bird, called *the spoon-bill*, and broke only one of his wings. He took it up and brought it on board. It was a young one, and all its plumage was of a faint rose colour; the process of the quill from which the beards of the wing feathers rise, was of a bright rose colour. Its legs were a foot long including the thighs, and of a light grey as well as the feet, which were webbed, like those of geese. Its beak was six inches in length, and both the upper and under part flat, grey towards the root, and white towards the extremity: it began to spread at about two thirds of its length, and ended in a spatula, of two inches and a half diameter in its greatest breadth. We carried it to the ship, where it lived three days on some small fishes, and bits of fresh meat, which were forced down its throat; for it would not eat of itself. When any one came near it, it made a noise with its bill as loud as that of two wooden battle-dores struck one against the other.

Some of our sailors gave it the name of flamingo, but that of *spoon-bill*, or *palette (battledore)* is more suitable, on account of the shape of its bill, very unlike to that of the flamingo, which is made almost in the commonest form of a bird-bill.



The next day we went again on the island in pursuit of the animal we had not been able to meet with the evening before. There were several that made their way into the same wood. M. l'Huillier found there another beast of the same size as that I have mentioned, but of the yellow colour, and nearly of the shape, of a lion. He fired three times at him loaded with bullet, two of which wounded without stopping him, and without making him go one step either faster or slower. We followed him by the traces of the blood, but he rushed in among the thickets, and we saw no more of him. The heat being very intense, and we having scarcely more than time sufficient to get on board for dinner, contented ourselves with killing parrots, plovers, snipes and some other birds. As I was curious to have a humming bird, of which I saw many flying round our heads, and could not, or at least did not know how to take them alive, I ventured to fire at one, which was fluttering about like a butterfly, and hovered in the same manner over a small branch of a tree. The little bird, whether through fear or the violent concussion of the air, dropped instantly. After having looked for it a long time, I found it at last dead on a leaf of the same branch. The figure of it in its natural size is to be seen in the plate.

Some call this bird, *Lifongere* or *Beequesfleurs*, because it is continually fluttering about flowers, like the butterfly, and sucks the moisture of them in the same manner. The whole compass of its body with the feathers is not larger than a common nut. It has a tail near three times as long as its body; its neck is rather small, its head in proportion, and its eyes are very sharp. The bill is somewhat whitish at the root, the rest of it is black; it is as long as the body of the bird, is small and very sharp. The wings are long, thin, and very extensive in proportion; the extremity of the feathers reaches to two-thirds or thereabouts of the tail, which as well as the wings is of a purpleish brown. The rest of the plumage is green with a gold cast, as if one had spread a layer of green almost transparent over a leaf of gold.

The

The neck and head are of a deep blue, gilt in the same manner. These colours vary according as the light strikes more or less forcibly on the different parts. Sometimes the whole plumage of this bird resembles a pigeon's neck, or the green feathers on the wings of wild ducks; sometimes it is of a fine blue, sometimes of a fine green, sometimes of a purple, and all these mixed with the splendor of a lively gold colour, bright and burnished. The tongue of this bird in miniature is forked, and has the appearance of two twists of red silk. Its feet are short, black, and furnished with very long claws.

There are several species of them, which differ both in size and colour. One of the small kind, which I have preserved in brandy, has white feathers from the breast to the tail. The colour of the rest of its plumage is like that of the others.

The female lays but two eggs, of the size of a small pea. They build their nests in orange trees with the smallest straws they can find. The Portuguese, who lived in the cottage near which we watered, gave us one of these nests with two young ones in it, which were not yet covered with the first down. He had just taken it with the father and mother, close by his habitation; we put it down on a stone bench at the door of the house, while we were eating an orange, and had scarcely turned our backs, when a cat came and carried off both nest and young ones. These nests are of an admirable construction, and about the size of a half crown. The Brazilians call this bird by the names of *Guainumbi*, *Guinambi*, *Aratica*, *Aratarataguacu*. The Portuguese call it *Pegafrol*.

We had beside these a third kind, somewhat larger than those I have been describing, but much less than the smallest wrens we have in Europe. The feathers of their head begin towards the middle of their upper bill. They are exceedingly small at their rise, are disposed in scales, and grow larger as they are nearer to the head, at the top of which they form a little tuft of uncommon beauty for the brilliancy of the gold, and the variety of colours, which change according to the direction of the rays



of light, or the position of the spectator's eye. Sometimes the plumage of this bird is of a black equal to that of the finest black velvet, sometimes of a pea green, sometimes yellow. At other times it resembles cloth of gold shaded with all these colours. The back is of a dark green shot with gold. The large feathers of the wing are of a deep violet, approaching sometimes to purple. The tail is composed of nine feathers as long as the whole body, and of a black mixed with brown, purple, and violet, which form a most agreeable assemblage of colours, and have the same changeable property as above. The whole lower part of the belly likewise exhibits a mixture of black, violet, green, and yellow, which always strike the eye of the observer differently, according to the difference of his own situation or of that of the bird. Its eyes are of a lively, brilliant black, not inferior to the finest polished jet; its legs are short, and black, as well as its feet, which are composed of four claws, three of them in front, all furnished with black, crooked, sharp talons, very long in proportion to the rest of the body. When it flies, it makes a buzzing with its wings, very much like that of certain large flies which we see in France fluttering about among the flowers. It builds its nest upon shrubs, among high branches of orange, or other low trees. In our French islands it goes by the name of *Colibris*, and sometimes *Quinde*. The Spaniards call them *Tomineios*, because the nest and bird together do not weigh more than the Spanish *Tomin*.

When we came on board, we found a Spaniard there, who was settled in the country, and to whose care we had, the day we came to anchor, committed a sheep that was distempered and very lean: the sheep was to graze about the man's cottage, by which means we hoped to restore him. This Spaniard had brought us some hundreds of oysters. They were much larger than the white oysters of Saintonge; for the shells were at least five inches in diameter. We do not eat fatter or better oysters in France. They were a perfect cream, both in taste and whiteness. We did every thing in our power to induce the Spaniard to discover the place where he found them, but we could not succeed.

succeed. All we could obtain from him was a promise of bringing us some more, and this was not performed till a day or two before our departure. We endeavoured to find out his cottage, but in vain; he had not given us a proper direction; and as for our sheep we saw no more of it: he made us ample amends, however, when we were on the point of quitting the harbour, by a present he brought us of some thousands of oranges and lemons, and of seven or eight hundred of the same kind of oysters.

There was a Portuguese too on board, who had brought a large handsome canoe, which our captain M. Duclou Guyot had bought for M. de Bougainville, who imagined at that time, that it might be very useful to us at the Malouine islands, to which we were bound. She was fitted out with her \* *Pagaïes*, or PAGALLES, as father Labat calls them in his *Nouveaux Voyages*. This canoe was made of a single trunk of a cinnamon tree hollowed, nineteen feet, odd inches in length, and three feet in breadth on the inside, and about the same depth. Some of our officers, as well land as sea, who had been in Canada, understood the working of her. She was used on our fishing expeditions. But when we put into Montevideo, M. de Bougainville parted with her to a Spanish officer for eight piastres; she had cost him about eighteen French livres.

About four o'clock in the afternoon we went over to the main land, and visited several cottages on the coast, where we made provision of lemons, oranges, and some pine-apples, which we found ripe. This fruit, and the plant which bears it are known at present in Europe, as they bear the voyage very well, but there is a very great difference both in flavour and smell between the specimens of this fruit produced in France, even in Provence and Languedoc, and what is found in Brazil. It grows there of itself without cultivation, and in great abundance. It turns the knives, with which it is cut, black, and spoils them; which pro-



bably has given occasion to some authors to say, that the rind of it is so hard, that it blunts the edge of a knife. It is true, that if, after cutting the pine-apple in slices, you neglect to wash and wipe your knife very well, you will find it after a few hours spoiled and rusty, as if you had put *aqua fortis* somewhat lowered upon it. The juice of this fruit is of great efficacy in taking spots out of cloaths. That of Brazil, they will tell you, is a preservative against sea-sickness.

In my walk I gathered some seeds of plants, and some grenadillas, with a small red fruit of the colour of cinnabar, which bears a pretty near resemblance to the love-apple. A Portuguese, who was with us, told me, they call it *Maracuja*, the figure of it is in the plate annexed.

The plant which bears this fruit is prickly, the leaf is very like that of the *Stramonium furiosum*, but not so large. Under the rind of the fruit is a pulp, of one sixth part of an inch in depth, white, and of the consistence of that of the Calville apple, of a sweetish but insipid flavour. The inside is intirely filled with flat seeds, of the same form as those of the large Pimento or long pepper. The Portuguese informed me, that the fruit, *Maracuja*, was never eaten, altho' he did not know that it had any dangerous qualities.

The Grenadilla of Brazil is round, yet rather flat at the ends, and of the size of a pullet's egg. Its bark is very smooth, glittering on the outside, and of a carnation colour, when the fruit is ripe. On the inside it is white and soft, its thickness about the eighth part of an inch. The substance which it incloses is viscous, it is of a refreshing and cordial nature, the taste of it is between sweet and sour. It may be eaten in quantities without any inconvenience. There are to be found in it a number of small seeds or kernels much resembling linseed in shape, and not so hard as those of the common pomegranate. This whole substance is separated from the bark by a very thin skin. The plant which bears this fruit twines about the trees, and resembles as to its leaves and flower, what we call the passion flower. It diffuses a very sweet scent. To eat the Grenadilla in perfection, it should not be suffered

ferred to ripen entirely upon the plant. It would decay and dry up. It must be gathered a little before it is ripe, and kept a few days.

Since our arrival at Brazil we were constantly in search of parrots, but could not find any tame ones to be bought. In the tour that we made, we had the good luck to meet with some complaisant Portuguese, who parted with one to Mr. l' Huillier ; this officer found means also to get one for Mr. de Belcourt. Upon our returning on board, a Spaniard who talked a little French, and whom we had commissioned to procure us some, offered us four, two of which were already reared, and talked the Portuguese language, as did the two of which I have already spoken. The other two were but just taken from their nest, and could not feed themselves. I gave a striped ribband for one of these last ; and I preferred it with an idea that it would learn the French language with greater facility. I kept him till the beginning of May, when he died of a catarrh in the head. This catarrh had caused his eyes to swell. It fell upon his lungs, and having rendered him asthmatic, it was impossible for me to save him.

Among these parrots there were three kinds, which differed in their plumage and size. One of M. l' Huillier's had the feathers of his neck and stomach of a tawny and changeable red, mixed with a little grey ; the top of the fore part of the head of a vermilion colour, rather faded and extinguished, the tips of the wings of a brighter red than that of the rose, and several of the feathers in the wings and tail of a fine carmine ; others of a very fine azure blue, and some black : all the rest of the body was green. He spoke Portuguese extremely well, and learned French very easily. He died just upon our arrival at the Malouine islands. The second was bigger than any we had : the top of his head was of a vermilion red, the two sides of a light blue towards the ears, and which grew fainter even so much as to become grey in proportion as the feathers were at a greater distance from them. The wings and tail were like those of the first. The



others were scarce above half that size ; they resembled them however as to their plumage, except that the red upon their heads was much more lively, which might perhaps be owing to their being younger. *Monf. de Bougainville's* parrot died of the same disorder as mine, during our stay at the *Malouine* islands ; *M. de Belcourt's* fell into the sea and was drowned, so that out of seven, we brought no more than two to France, *Mr. l' Huillier's* large one, which I delivered to him safe and sound at *Versailles*, and one of the smaller kind which had no tail, for he plucked out the feathers of it as fast as they grew. The sailor to whom it belonged, had not taken near the same care of him as we had done of ours, and yet preserved him. It was impossible to speak better than he did ; and he imitated the cries of the children we had on board, and those of the cabin boys when they were whipt for any fault they had committed, the cackling of the hens, and the noise of all the other animals we had in the frigate, so well, as to deceive every body that heard him.

Passing by the habitation in which we had lodged our *Acadian* families, we heard a noise like that of a wood-cutter felling of wood. We asked a freed negro, what it was ? It is, answered he, a monkey that ranges about the garden to eat the fruit and the corn, and is giving notice to his comrades to come and assist him ; but if I had a good gun like yours, I would soon dislodge him. He has been two or three days making this racket. One of our boatswains lent him his gun ; the negro loaded it with large shot, followed the noise, and shot at the monkey twice without making him run away : at the third shot he fell dead at the foot of the tree. The boatswain brought the monkey on board the frigate where we had opportunity to examine him at our leisure. He was near two feet eight inches high, when standing upon his hind legs ; his hair was long, and of a fawn coloured brown all over his body except under the belly, which approached the clear fawn colour. His brown beard began from his ears and fell near five inches upon his breast ; his feet and hands were black ; his ears, destitute of hair, were well detached from each

each other and his face covered with a tawny down, so close as to be hardly distinguishable from the skin. His eye brows were of a darker hue and prominent. His tail was as long as his body including his head.

I know not at what sport he had lost his left eye: this, however, was not to be perceived without a close examination; for in the socket he had substituted a ball, composed of a gum which was unknown to us, of rotten wood and some very fine moss, the whole mixed up together. The eye-lid covered this ball as if it had been really the globe of the eye. Whether he had contrived this false eye to appear less deformed, or to cure his wounded eye, or to defend it from the insults of flies and other insects, I leave to conjecture. We observed also, that this monkey appeared old, for the skin of his face was greatly wrinkled, and he had some white hairs in his beard. We saw but this one during our stay at the island of St. Catherine's, though we were told that there were a great number, and that the inhabitants eat the young ones, which are very good. They endeavoured even to persuade me that one of the ragouts of which I ate at the Governor's, and which I took to be an excellent rabbit, was really a monkey. Be this as it would, many others ate of it as well as myself, and appeared well pleased with it.

The master of the habitation near which we got our water, having perceived that Mr. le Roy, lieutenant of our ship, had a great inclination for a pretty little bird that he had in a cage, and which sang very well, made him a present of it. This bird is called in the Brazils, *Guranbé Engera*. It is of the size of a Canary bird. Its wings, back, neck and tail are blue, with some white spots about the middle of the large feathers of the wings and tail, disposed in the same manner as these spots are in the wings and tail of the gold-finch. From the under part of the bill along the breast to the under part of the tail, all the feathers are of a golden yellow, bright and glittering; its warbling varies like that of the Canary, and it imitates the singing of other

M

birds.



birds. There are several sorts of them. The Brazilians call them also *Teitei*. For its Figure, see the Plate.

As I was walking in the fields with our captain, I perceived him gathering a large quantity of a plant with yellow flowers, which I took at the first glance for the yellow amaranth, which abounds on the rising grounds on the coast of Terra Firma. Curiosity led me to ask him the use which he meant to put it to. He told me, that it was the *Doradilla*; that when he was at Valparaíso, he had heard it called by that name; and that in that town, as well as in all the others in Peru, where he had been, they used a great deal of it in infusion for the cure of pains in the stomach. Our captain was subject to them at times. I gathered a pretty large quantity of it, and we drank it sometimes by way of tea. The taste of it is agreeable enough. Others call it *Vira-verda*; this is the name that is given to it at Montevideo also. Frezier, in his account of his voyage to the South seas, says, that a French surgeon made use of it with great success in the cure of the tertian ague. But the *Doradilla* which the Spaniards have, is a kind of spleen-wort, the leaf of which is curled. They attribute great virtues to it. The stalk and leaves of the vira-verda, which we speak of at present, are spongy, and like the yellow amaranth, its flower is an assemblage of small yellow buds, the leaves of which are pointed. The flowers of the amaranth are in form of a rose, and the leaves of it are disposed in the same manner.

At our return from fishing, abundantly supplied as usual, we examined the different sorts of fish, and among them found that which is called in the Brazils *Panapana*. The one that I give the figure of was two feet and a half long from the head to the beginning of the tail, the distance between the eyes was ten inches. Its skin was rough and hard like that of a shark, but considerably finer, nearly the same as that of the skin of a kind of shark, commonly slim and of a middling size, which our sailors call *Demoiselle*; we caught three or four of them during

our stay at the island of St. Catherine's, and two at the Maldonades at the mouth of Rio de la Plata.

The head of the Panapana is flat, ill-formed, and in the shape of a hammer. Its eyes are at a great distance from each other; being placed at the opposite extremities of the head. Its mouth and tail are like those of the shark, its teeth are very sharp; but I did not find seven rows of them. Our sailors gave it the name of *marteau* or hammer, which is very applicable to its shape.

Among the number of plants which I gathered, was a sort of pepper, or pimento, very common in the fields along the skirts of the woods. Its taste is infinitely sharper than that of the pimento or long pepper, which we are accustomed to in France. On this account our sailors called it *piment enragé*. This fruit is of the same length form and colour, but at least twice as thick as that of the Barberry tree. It is at first green, and grows red as it becomes ripe. The flower which precedes it, is like that of the pimento. The plant which bears it, grows to the height of about two feet. It is full of branches and joints; its stem is round, green, and rather slender. The leaves of it are in shape like those of the *solanum hortense*, or garden nightshade; but as small as those of the *chenopodium fœtidum* or *vulvaria*, which they resemble much. One of the small fruits of the *piment enragé* put into sauce, heightens the flavour as much as an entire one of the larger sort. This induced our sailors to lay in a large provision of them.

I had also furnished myself with all the ripe seeds of the plants which I found, and having met with some Portuguese women in a hut, who were picking cotton to separate it from its seeds, they gave me a handful of them. They did me the greater pleasure, as I was very desirous of having some, and as I could not gather any from the plant, the shrub being just then in flower. The wood of it is tender and spongy; the bark thin and grey. Its leaves are of a bright green when young, but grow of a deeper colour as they approach to maturity, or as the shrub grows old. They are large, and divided into five parts, which



terminate in a point. Those which are nearest the flower are only in three parts, and resemble much those of the *Ricinus*. Its flowers are almost like those of a small shrub, which is now in fashion for the decoration of our parterres, called *Althæa*; They are not however quite so open. They are yellow towards the end, and spotted with red at the bottom. It is a pentapetalous plant, supported by a calix of small green leaves, which are hard and pointed. To the pistil succeeds a bud, or oval fruit, which in its state of maturity is of the bigness of a duck's egg. This fruit is divided into three or four different cells, filled with a white stringy substance, which incloses ten or twelve seeds of a dark brown colour sticking together two by two, like wheat in the ear. These seeds are of the size of a pea, and about three or four lines in length.

This stringy substance is that which we know by the name of cotton. It swells and springs in the shell, which contains it, in such a manner as to force it open when the fruit is ripe. At that time the seeds, full of an oily substance, separate themselves, with the locks of cotton which inclose them, and fall from the fruit, unless care is taken to gather them in time.

The Portuguese must certainly be unacquainted with the machines which are made use of in our Antilles, for separating the cotton from the seeds which it incloses, and to which it sticks; or else the Portuguese women I have seen employed at this work, did it merely by way of amusement; for they separated it bit by bit, only by pinching the cotton between their fingers. They spin it afterwards to make cloth of it; but I do not know with what machine, as I never saw them at that work.

This is the only kind of cotton tree which I found cultivated in the island of St. Catherine's, and upon the coasts of the Continent in its neighbourhood. It is very different from the cotton tree in the Brazils, of which Dampier speaks in the following terms: " Its flower is composed of small filaments almost as loose as hair, three or four inches long, and of a dark red except the tips, which are of an ash colour. At the bottom

" tom

“ tom of the stalk there are five narrow stiff leaves about six inches long.” The kind which Frezier speaks of, resembles in every respect that which I have described, except that the seeds of the latter are not separated from each other, and dispersed in the cotton, as that author says, and as he has represented them in the figure which he has given of the fruit. It seems as if father Labat had copied from this figure of the cotton tree the one which he has inserted in the second volume of his new voyage to the American islands, or perhaps Frezier may have taken it from him. The figures given by each of them are exactly alike.

In a hut a little farther on, where we went to beg some water to drink, the woman who gave us some was employed in stripping leaves, with long thin thorns on the stalk, from a kind of reed very common along the sides of the woods and roads. She drew from them a sort of green thread extremely fine, much like raw-silk, and of a light green colour. She told us, that she afterwards spun this stringy substance to make lines and fishing nets of it, which she said lasted a long time. Perhaps it might be made use of for other purposes.

Not far from thence, I saw for the first time, a kind of aloes called *pithe*, the leaf of which when steeped like hemp affords a substance fit for spinning, and of which they make linen cloth in the East. From the midst of a score of leaves, about five feet high, and at least three inches thick at the bottom, their edges thorny, ending in a point, hollowed out, and of a fine green, sprang up a green stalk of about eight inches diameter at the bottom, which diminished gradually to the top, and grew to the height of at least thirty feet. From the height of about twenty feet of this stalk quite to its summit, there sprang branches to the number of twelve or fifteen, adorned with a number of sprigs, almost like the growing stalk of the lilly plant, when rising about two inches from the earth. These tufts of sprigs grow irregularly along the branches, which are destitute of any other foliage, and spread themselves almost horizontally. Without doubt, these sprigs when arrived to a certain pitch of maturity,



break of themselves, and take root in the earth where they happen to fall. I picked up about fifteen with their roots, which I carried on board, where we planted them in boxes placed over our cabbins. They did very well there, and we should in all probability have preserved the greatest part of them, if, notwithstanding all our care, two cats which we had on board had not scratched up the earth of these boxes, and poisoned it with their urine and excrement. We resolved at last, though rather late, to cover them with fishing nets, supported by hoops, and we preserved two plants of them as well as some cotton trees, raised from the seeds which we had sown. They were all transplanted at our arrival at St. Malo's, into the garden of Beau Sejour at St. Servant, which was occupied by M. Duclos Guyot our captain.

The Portuguese have perhaps remarked that the sprigs of the *pithe*, which have thus taken root of themselves, do not thrive so well as those, which have been carefully put into ground well tilled. This is probably what induces them to make holes of about a foot square in the earth beneath the branches, and about the plant itself, where I found five or six of these sprigs planted; and which, in reality, seemed to have thriven better than those which had been wholly abandoned to nature. I cannot say, whether the *pithe* bears any other fruit, or whether it multiplies by any other means.

Besides lemons and oranges, there is in the isle of St. Catherine's a sort of refreshment for sportsmen. This fruit, which is very common, is called the American Indian fig. It is in shape much like our figs. Its first skin is green; it then grows rather yellow, and afterwards assumes the colour of red lacker on the side which has been exposed to the rays of the sun. This skin is stuck full of very small prickles. Those who gather this fruit and peel it must be very dextrous, not to fill their fingers with these prickles, which are almost imperceptible. Happily they cause more uneasiness than mischief, till one has found the method of getting rid of them.

Under

Under the skin, which is about as thick as that of a fig is found a white covering, thin and tenderer than the other. It incloses a soft substance, of a bright red, mixed with small grains like those of the fig. This substance has an acid taste, a little sweet, and extremely grateful. When people eat a considerable quantity of it their urine becomes red, but without any harm resulting from it. This fruit is even cooling. Our captain, his two sons and myself, were almost the only people who eat of it: the others did not dare to follow our example through apprehension of suffering some inconvenience from it.

In order to avoid running any of the risques which I have mentioned in gathering these prickly figs, get a small piece of wood shaped like a bodkin, and stick it into the fig near the stalk; cut off this stalk with a knife, and holding the fruit in this manner at the end of the bit of wood, peel it lightly all round, without touching it with your fingers.

On Saturday the tenth of December we sent out some people to shoot in the island, in order to procure some game to treat the Governor, whom M. de Bougainville had invited to dine on board our frigate the next day. They brought nothing but parrots, snipes, and some other birds.

We found in a wet marshy soil a prodigious quantity of a sort of crab which live on shore, and make their retreat in holes which they dig. They give them the name of *tourlourous*; the biggest are not above two inches wide. The shape of their shell is almost square, of a brownish red, growing lighter by degrees towards the belly, which is of a clear red. This shell or helmet is pretty strong though thin. Their eyes are of a shining black and as hard as horn. They shoot out and drawn in again like those of lobsters.

These crabs have four legs on each side, each of them composed of four joints, the last of which is flat and terminates in a point. They make use of them to walk sideways, like common crabs, and to dig up the earth. Beside these, they have two  
other



other legs or claws bigger than the former, but especially the right, which is at least double the size of the other. These claws or pincers are of a bright red, shaped like those of sea-crabs; they make use of them for cutting leaves, and the roots of plants on which they feed. When they see any thing which frightens them they strike these two claws against each other, as it were to frighten their enemy, and lift up the biggest of them perpendicularly, marching thus in a state of defence; but retiring at the same time into their holes. These claws as well as their legs, are so slightly fixed to their body that they come off in the hands of those who endeavour to take them, and the fourlouron escapes.

Both sexes have their tails bent under their bellies, where it enters so exactly into a cavity which is in the shell of the belly that it can hardly be distinguished. That of the male diminishes in size quite to the end. The female's is equally large to its extremity. As fast as the female lays her eggs, they attach themselves to the long rough hairs with which the under part of the tail is furnished. These support, cover, and prevent them from falling, or from being detached by the sand, herbs, or other unequal surfaces which fall in her way.

These animals were so numerous in this marshy ground, that it was impossible to set down one's foot without crushing several of them. I cannot say whether the inhabitants of the coasts eat these animals, as they do in the Antilles, where they are of great service to the Caribbees and negroes. The Creoles themselves, according to father Labat, regale themselves with them.

About ten o'clock in the morning, on Sunday the eleventh of December, we received the Governor on board. He left the town by two in the morning, in his canoe, with his son, accompanied by a minister from the King of Portugal, who was first president of the sovereign council of Rio Janeiro, by the Oviodore, the major, and some other officers of the garrison. The tide and a contrary wind had prevented their arriving sooner.

The

The tent was pitched upon the quarter-deck, which was set out in form for the company; the ship was spread with the quarter-cloths, and the French flag displayed. When every body was seated, I said mass with the usual solemnities; and at noon a dinner was served up as elegant as possible in our present situation. The King of Portugal's health was drunk, under a discharge of eleven pieces of cannon, which were all answered regularly from the fort of Santa Cruz.

After dinner some inferior officers, the same who had played on different instruments at the Governor's, played again, and made a kind of concert, which lasted about two hours. During this amusement, a wind arose unfavourable to the Governor's return, the weather became overcast, and so heavy a rain fell that it was scarce possible to think of going back to the town, or even to one of the forts. M. de Bougainville proposed a party of play to amuse these gentlemen, which was accepted. The wind and rain continuing, M. de Bougainville persuaded the governor and his company to lie on board. While we were waiting for supper, which consisted only of the remains of the dinner, and at which the Governor, as well as most of the rest of the company, drank only a glass of water, I conversed all the time with the Portuguese minister, who wanted nothing but practice to speak the French language well, and who made use of very expressive Latin words, whenever he was at a loss for a French term. This minister, who was well acquainted with Brazil, and was at that time upon his tour through the country, according to custom, was so obliging as to answer all my questions, and gave me all the information I could wish relative to the country and its inhabitants, of which I shall give an account hereafter.

Messieurs de Bougainville, and de Nerville, gave up their beds to the governor, and the Portuguese minister; the Oviodore lay in the cabin of M. Duclos Guyot our captain, and the other officers would absolutely lie upon the table under the tent, where matresses were spread for them. We all passed the night as well as we could. At four o'clock in the morning, the governor and



his company set off in his boat for Fort Santa Cruz, to give orders that we might be supplied with oxen, &c. and every thing we wanted. At his going away, we saluted him with nine pieces of cannon, which were immediately returned by the fort.

Before we sat down to supper, M. de Bougainville had begged the favour of the Governor, to get the letters we had written to give our friends some intelligence about us, conveyed to Portugal, and from thence to France. A few days after, a Portuguese snow, which then lay at anchor before the town of *Our Lady in Exile*, intended to set sail for Rio de Janeiro, and had promised us to deliver our packets to some one of the captains of the fleet, which was to set out from thence towards the end of the month. The Governor very readily took this commission upon himself; and M. de Bougainville sent him our parcels. But whether the Rio de Janeiro fleet was gone, before our letters reached that place, or whether from any other accident, it is certain that our parcels never came to hand.

Five or six hours after the Governor's landing at Fort Santa Cruz, a present came to us from him of two oxen, as many cows, a heifer, two turkeys, twenty-six Brazil ducks and drakes with large red tufts, and other refreshments. M. de Bougainville had in the evening presented him with a box full of snuff-boxes, painted and varnished by Martin, and with some very handsome fans.

The two following days were employed in completing our provision of wood for firing; it was composed of sassafras, cedar, and of yellow wood of Brazil. Having been told by a free negro, that the tree which bears the balsam of *copaiba*, known under the name of *copahu*, is not rare in this country, I did my utmost to get some of it, but could not succeed. The Portuguese who had promised to procure me some, assured me that this balsam only flows during the full moon.

As our destination was for a country, where our sailors had never yet been, and whose seas and weather were reputed tempestuous,

pestuous, before we set sail from Saint Catherine's, our captain, with his usual prudence and foresight, took care to provide himself with small top-masts and top-gallant sails, to serve in case of bad weather.

For this purpose he applied to the free negro, of whom I have made mention more than once; he rendered us all the service in his power with the greatest readiness, and even made a proposal to M. de Bougainville of going with him; adding, that he was ready to go to any place where we pleased to take him. He was a stout fellow, and worked hard; M. de Bougainville would willingly have acquiesced in his demand, if he had not been apprehensive that the Portuguese might have complained we had put in to decoy away the negroes of the country; and that such a report or suspicion might be of disservice to those French vessels which might afterwards put in at St. Catherine's.

This negro went himself into the forest, to look out for such trees as he thought might best suit our captain's purpose. When he had found them he informed him of it, and conducted us there through thickets and bushes, in the midst of which we were obliged to climb up the mountain to get at these trees, which were in the thick of the forest. We went thither well armed, and in a pretty large body, as well for the convenience of cutting down these trees, as to be able to convey them to the sea side. We met with no wild beasts in the forest, but only two or three large serpents which we killed. As we were going along I cut seven or eight bamboo canes; they are a kind of knotty reed, the joints of which are very close, and the closer they are the more beautiful are the canes. These bamboos were of a good size, from five feet and a half to six feet long; but unfortunately were not come to their maturity. In drying them they shrivelled up, and became as it were fluted. I left them at St. Malo's.

In order to convey our wood to the water side, we were obliged to tie them with cords, and to drag them, sometimes even to lift them, over branches which stopped up our way. We were often



forced to make a road, which we did with hatchets. I observed palm trees there of a prodigious height, of about a foot diameter, and as straight as bulrushes; this is a kind of tree whose trunk and branches are quite covered with small thorny excrescences, of about six or eight lines in diameter, or sometimes more at their base, projecting about half an inch, and the thorn, which grows in the center, being about four lines long. The bark of this tree is grey, and resembles that of the beach tree. May not this be the same, which is in our Antilles called *bois epineux*?

On Tuesday morning a sailor, after having cut some grass for our cattle, sitting down by it with his legs bare, was bit near the ankle by a serpent, as he told us, about a foot and a half long, of a reddish yellow colour in streaks. He paid no attention to the bite, and as soon as he came on board he dined heartily without uneasiness, saying he was hungry. In about half an hour after he found himself sick; and perceiving his leg very much swelled and painful, he came and acquainted me with it. I began by endeavouring to keep up his spirits, and to ease him of the fear which had seized upon him. Whilst I was giving notice of this to the two surgeons of our frigate, he vomited, and did the same once or twice in the space of an hour. We made him take two drams of theriaca mixed in a glass of wine, with ten drops of volatile spirit of sal ammoniac, and after having scarified the wound, which was already become black, applied to it a plaister of theriaca pounded with garlick. Notwithstanding this his sickness continued, and he vomited two or three times more. The same remedy was repeated. In the meanwhile, a Portuguese officer from Fort Santa Cruz came on board, to whom we related what had happened. The sailor's account, with the description of the reptile, gave the officer reason to judge, that this serpent was of one of those kinds which the people of the country call *Jararaca*. "Its venom, said he, is so dangerous, that it causes inevitable death to those, who are not excited by it to vomit within the four and twenty hours. But  
since

since your failor has vomited, you may make yourselves easy upon his account. Continue however to give him the same medicine, with the addition of an emetic. There are several other kinds of *Jararaca*, which are equally to be dreaded; especially one, which is of an earth or cinder colour, with some streaks on the head which are rather darker." The next day, neither the blackness of the wound, nor the inflammation of the leg being increased, the emetic was given to the patient, and a fresh plaister of the same kind as the former was applied. After this no other accident happened to him, and the wound was treated as a common one. He was purged twice afterwards, and from that time was very well. In going into the woods and fields, you are almost always liable to be bit by these dangerous reptiles, which are very numerous there. We very frequently saw in the sand on the sea side, winding furrows formed by the traces of serpents which had passed there. If any one who has the misfortune to be bit by one of them, does not immediately meet with proper assistance, he must expect to die in the most cruel tortures. Some sorts, especially those of the *Juraracas*, exhale a very strong smell of musk. This smell is of great service to those who know it, to prevent their being surpris'd by them.

The only lizard which I saw in the isle of St. Catherine's, might be about two feet long, and three or four inches broad. Its skin was black, spotted with white from the head to the end of the tail. The belly was much the same, but the white was rather prevalent; all over the rest of the body, the black and white was almost equally disposed in spots of a regular figure: its shape in other respects was like that of the green lizards in France. M. de Nerville, who was with me, was preparing his gun to fire at him, when I perceived that the animal was dead. We went towards it; but as it already stank very much, we did not think proper to examine it with greater attention. Might not this be what is called by the people of the country the *Maboya*, or *Tejuguacu*, and *Iguana* by Pison and Margraff?

The



The rattle snake is very common there: its length extends as far as three feet, but very seldom exceeds above half a foot more. Its colour is of an iron grey, regularly streaked. At the extremity of its tail is fastened what the Spaniards call its *cascabelle*, and for the same reason the serpent *cascabella*. This *cascabelle*, which we have chose to call the rattle, on account of the noise it makes, resembles the husks of peas dried upon the plant. It is divided in the same manner into several joints, which contain small round little bones, whose friction produces a sound much like that of two or three rattles, or small bells which make but a dull noise. The day that M. de Belcourt and I were in the woods looking for the animal whose traces we had seen in the sand, we thought we heard this sound mixed with a kind of hissing; which also was much like the noise usually made by grasshoppers. The bite of this serpent is so dangerous, that it is happy for the inhabitants of the countries where it is found, that nature has given to this reptile a sign to warn them of its approach; without which, its colour differing very little from that of the earth, it would be very difficult for them not to be surpris'd by it, and to avoid it. This animal is also called *boicinininga*.

To feed the cattle which we were taking with us from the island of St. Catherine, we laid in a provision of the stalks of the *banana tree*, with which we covered our quarter-deck, both within and without. This forrage is the most convenient for transportation; as it takes up very little room, and was therefore less cumbersome than any other. Besides, meadows are very scarce in this island, as well as along the coast of the Continent, and the little grass which grows there is marshy. It would have been difficult to have procured a sufficient quantity of it; and that even, not being come to a state of maturity fit for keeping, would have heated, and afforded a very bad subsistence for these cattle. The stalks of the banana were a very good substitute, as much on account of their keeping very well, as because they are very nourishing. We had only to cut them in pieces with  
a knife,

a knife, after which our oxen and sheep ate them with great eagerness.

The banana is a plant, the stem of which is composed only of leaves rolled one upon the other, of a reddish white colour in some places, and a greenish yellow in others. When the root shoots out a sprig, there are only two leaves rolled one within the other, which appear coming out at the edge of the ground. These leaves unfold and expand themselves, to give way to two others, arising from the same center. These being rolled up as the former, expand themselves in the same manner, and are followed by several others, which growing higher and broader as they succeed each other, and being always rolled up in the same manner, form at length the stem of this arboreous plant, which rises to eight, ten, and even twelve feet; but not any higher. Then the leaves grow out from the top, and the middle of the stem, to which they are connected merely by a foot stalk about an inch in diameter, a foot long, round on one side, and hollowed on the other by a groove in the middle. This foot stalk being continued, forms the vein or band which runs along the middle of the leaf, which is sometimes fifteen or eighteen inches wide, and six or seven feet long. The supine disk of this leaf is of a fine green colour, the prone disk of a green inclining to grey, which makes it appear silvered. It is nearly of the substance of very thick parchment; yet it is so delicate, and its size exposes it so much to the action of the wind, that it is divided into several slips. These slips extend from the vein running in the middle towards the edges of the leaf, by the side of the smaller veins running in the same direction, and appearing, some like narrow silver ribbands, others like slips of the same colour, fixed to the vein in the middle, and rolled upon themselves.

When the banana is grown up to its natural height, it is from nine to ten inches in diameter, and the stem of it is so tender, that, though the leaves of which it is composed, are joined very close to each other, it may easily be cut with a knife, or even with a single stroke of a hedging bill, taken a little aslant; for



the leaves are pulpy and full of juice, and this is the reason why it always thrives best in a rich and moist soil.

When it is come to such maturity as to be capable of bearing fruit, it pushes out, from the middle of the top of its stem, another stem of about an inch and half in diameter, and three or four feet in length, which is covered with circular rows of buds of a yellow colour bordering on green. A large bud in the shape of a heart, from six to seven inches in length and three in diameter, terminates this stem. It is composed of several pellicles laid one over another, the outside of which is red, and has a second covering which is compact, smooth, and of the colour of the lilack. This bud rises from an aperture made by the division of the stem into four parts. At first the stem is strait, but in proportion as the blossoms disappear, and give way to the fruit, which succeeds them, the increase of weight bends it insensibly, and draws it more and more towards the ground.

In our Antilles, this stalk laden with fruit is called a *régime*. I know not by what name the Portuguese call it. One of these stalks is sometimes furnished with as many bananas, as one man can carry. The fruit is fastened to the part which before supported the flower. It is customary to cut off the stalk, as soon as the fruit upon it begins to change from green to yellow. It is then suspended in an airy part of the house, and the fruit is eaten as it grows ripe, which is discovered, by its giving way to the finger, and becoming yellow. We hung up about a score of these stalks round the quarter deck; and some of our officers were so fond of this fruit, and eat it so eagerly, that they would not give it time to ripen. The banana is about two inches in diameter, and the longest I have seen of them did not exceed six inches in length. The two ends terminate in a rounded point: the figure of it is angular, but the angles are very obtuse. The skin is smooth, pliable, rather thicker than that of a fig, and much more firm. The pulp is of a yellowish white, and of the consistence of very fat new cheese, blended with its cream; or of butter recently churned, which the banana resembles very much, especially

especially when roasted. It tastes indeed much like this kind of butter, supposing it to have been mixed with the pulp of quinces rather too ripe. It is esteemed an excellent kind of food; for my part, I found nothing extraordinary in it; though I eat the fruit both raw and roasted, ripe and unripe, in order to judge of the difference of the taste.

We had been very desirous of providing ourselves with a quantity of *batatas* and *yams*, but they were not yet in a state fit to be taken out of the ground. The *batata* is a species of potatoe, or topinambou, but much more delicate.

The *yam* is a creeping plant, furnished with branches which take root, and spring up again without cultivation; so that if care is not taken to root out a number of them, they will soon spread all over the soil, though there should not have been more than one or two roots planted at first. The stem is square, of the size of one's little finger, or thereabouts. Its leaves are cordiform, having their apex a little lengthened out and pointed. They are of a dark green colour, as large as those of the *lappa major* or greater bardana. They grow less in size as they are placed farther from the root; but they are still smooth, thick, and pulpy, fixed to the stem in pairs, by short petioles, square, and rather curvated. From the stem arise some clusters of small campanulate flowers, the pistil of which becomes a filiqua or pod, filled with small black seeds. These seeds are seldom sown, because the plant thrives better and faster from slips. For this purpose, the head of the fruit, with part of the stem supporting it, is put into the ground.

The root is more or less thick in proportion to the goodness of the soil in which it grows. The rind is unequal, rough, thick, of a deep violet colour, and very hairy. The inside is of the consistence of beet-root, of a greyish white, bordering sometimes upon a flesh colour. It is eaten prepared in the same manner as the beet-root, boiled in water, or roasted on the embers, sometimes with the meat. It is well tasted, very nourishing, and



easy of digestion. The negroes and Portuguese are remarkably fond of it.

One of the two married Acadians, who were lodged in a hut on shore, was afflicted with a violent diarrhœa, which baffled all the skill of the two surgeons of our frigate. The freed negro offered to cure him with a ptisan, and might probably have succeeded, if he had had more time for the application, for the man found himself much better after having taken it only for two days. What this negro called a ptisan, was no more than a simple decoction of the ends of the buds and infant fruit of the guaiava. If this fruit had been a little farther advanced, perhaps it might have been still more serviceable. The Acadian not having laid in a stock of these buds, before we sailed, had it not in his power to continue the medicine: his disorder returned upon him with greater force, and did not leave him till about a fortnight before our departure from the Malouine islands, where he began to find himself better a few days after our landing. The wholesomeness of the air, added to the exercise he took, made him stronger every day, and at the time we set sail from thence, he thought himself perfectly cured.

The same negro had cured the Acadian's wife's sister, whose name is *Benoit*, in a few days of an inflammation in her legs; which had got to such a height, that she could scarcely stand. This inflammation was attributed to a scorbutic habit. However this was, she complained of great pains in her ankle-bones, which went off after the negro had applied a fomentation made of some herbs of the country boiled in clear water. In six or seven days she was cured; and they assured me, that the negro had used nothing but the guaiava.

The guaiava is a tree well known in our American islands. Those which were called by that name on the island of St. Catherine's, were not more than eight feet high, and the trunk between seven and eight inches in diameter. None of those I saw were of a larger size. The bark of it was something whiter than that of the apple-tree, its branches extended in the same manner,

manner, and the fruit, which was very young, resembled apples of about a month's growth. By the leaves and the shape of the tree, I took it at first for a quince-tree. I was told, that the fruit when ripe is excellent, and it was represented to me as of the same kind as our guaiavas of the Antilles; although the description, which father Labat gives of this tree and its leaves, does not answer to the guaiava tree of Brazil. In other respects, the Portuguese ascribe the same properties to their guaiava tree, as father Labat does to that of Martinico.

The same Acadian, when he came on board again found himself very much incommoded with a small tumor, which had come a few days before on the great toe of his left foot. This tumor increased, and the pain it occasioned, increased in proportion. He shewed it to the doctor (for so we call the two principal surgeons on board) who immediately discovered it to be *anigua* or *nigue*, or the *pique*, as it is called at Peru. This is an insect so exceedingly small, that it is scarcely visible. A particular description of it may be found in M. Ulloa's voyage to Peru, which exactly agrees with what we saw at the island of St. Catherines. Our Acadian was cured by extracting the nest, and applying tobacco ashes to the part. The legs of this insect, says the author I have just referred to, are not formed for springing like those of fleas, which is a very providential circumstance, for if it had the power of leaping, there is no living creature in the parts where these insects are found, but what would be full of them. Such a breed would destroy three fourths of mankind, by the different accidents it might bring upon them.

The nigua always harbours in the dust, and particularly in dirty places. It fastens upon one's feet, even upon the soles of them, and upon one's fingers, and pierces the skin so subtilely, that it makes its way almost without being felt. It is seldom perceived, till it begins to extend itself. At first, there is no great difficulty in pulling it out; but if it has once got in only its head, it fixes itself so firmly, that it cannot be got rid of without the loss of some of the parts adjacent. If it happens not to be dis-



covered soon enough, it pierces through the first skin without resistance, and lodges itself there, where it continues, sucking the blood, and makes itself a nest of a fine white membrane resembling in shape a flat pearl. Within this space it lies so that its head and feet are turned towards the outside for the convenience of nourishment, and the rest of its body towards the inside of the membrane in order to deposit its eggs there. As the eggs are laid, the membrane grows larger; and in four or five days time, becomes one sixth of an inch in diameter. It is of the utmost consequence to remove this, otherwise, it will burst, and spread about an infinite number of spawns, like nits; that is to say, so many niguas, which will insinuate themselves presently into the parts about, and create a great deal of pain, not to mention the difficulty of dislodging them. Sometimes they will penetrate even to the bone; and after one has succeeded so far as to get rid of them, the pain continues till the flesh and skin are entirely healed.

The operation is tedious and painful. It consists in separating with the point of a needle the flesh which touches the membrane, wherein the eggs are contained; and this is not easy to be done without cracking the membrane, a circumstance absolutely necessary to be guarded against. After having detached every ligament even to the smallest, the pearl is next to be removed, which is larger or smaller in proportion to the time the insect has been lodged there. If unfortunately the nest should be broken, double care must be taken in separating all the roots, and particularly in securing the principal nigua; who, if she escapes, will begin again to lay her eggs before the wound is closed, and burying herself in the flesh would make it much more difficult to remove her. In the cavity made by the tumor, they put some hot ashes of chewed tobacco.

Although this insect is not felt at the time of its penetrating through the skin, by the next day it causes a violent and very painful itching, particularly in some parts, such as under the nails.

The

The pain is not so great at the bottom of the foot, the skin there being thicker.

It is observed that the nigua has a mortal antipathy to certain animals, particularly the *Cerda*, which it devours by degrees, and whose fore and hind feet are found after its death full of holes.

Notwithstanding the smallness of this insect, it has been observed to be distinguished into two species, the one venomous, the other not. The latter is of the colour of fleas, and makes the membrane white, in which it deposits its eggs. The other sort is yellowish, and its nest is of the colour of ashes. One of the properties of this species is, when it has insinuated itself into the extremity of the great toe, to cause a very high inflammation in the glands of the groin, accompanied with sharp pains, which do not go off till the eggs are extirpated. It is to M. de Jussieu that we owe this distinction of the niguas into two species. That gentlemen, as well as the other French Academicians, who accompanied him in his voyage to Peru, having had the mortification of repeatedly experiencing these pains, which they knew not how to account for.

During the great heats, the utmost care is necessary to avoid wetting one's feet. Without this precaution as appears by experience a man is liable to a disorder of so dangerous a nature, that it is generally mortal.

On Wednesday, the 14th of December, having got our provisions on board, and the wind being southerly, at ten in the morning we unmoored and sent our longboat on shore for the rest of our things, and the Acadians. Before they were taken into the boat, their baggage was examined with great care to see if no *Cancrelas* had got in amongst it, some of them having been seen in their hut. These are insects of the size of a May bug, and something of the same form, though rather flatter and longer, having a coat of a very dark green, but neither so hard nor so solid. They do an incredible deal of mischief in ships, as they multiply very fast, and lodge themselves every where,



where, eating through paper, books, cloaths, biscuits and even wood itself. They spoil every thing with their excrements and the disagreeableness of their smell. As some of them had been seen in the hut, where the Acadians lived, it had been recommended to them to clean their cloaths thoroughly : and we had the good fortune to be as free from them as from other insects usually met with at sea. At the Antilles, these insects are known by the name of *Ravets*.

At the same time we dispatched M. Alexander Guyot to Fort Santa Cruz, to make our apology to the Commandant for not saluting him at our departure, which we could not do on account of the live stock we had on board.

At eleven we set sail, and after doubling the point of *Bon-port* anchored in six fathom water, muddy ground, about two thirds of the distance of one shore from the other towards the north side ; here we waited for our longboat and yawl, and to take in ten oxen, which was finished by five in the afternoon. We lay to after this with one anchor all night, the weather being dull and hazy.

Thus we took leave of the island of St. Catherine's, where, as has been seen, we did not meet with the same cause of complaint as admiral Anson had done. It might be made an excellent habitation, if they would take the pains to clear it. Besides the little town I have spoken of, there are only a few huts or plantations on the coast of the island and continent adjacent. All the rest is a forest covered with lofty trees, and, as it were, choaked up with underwood. On the island particularly, the species of thorny aloe grows so thick, as to render it in many parts almost impenetrable. On the skirts of the woods towards the coast, there are many different sorts of trees of the height and thickness of apple-trees, but whose leaves are for the most part smooth, of a beautiful green, and shaped like those of the wild laurel. There is scarce any other difference between them than in their height or thickness. I observed one amongst them, which at first sight might have been taken for an almond tree :

tree: but the leaves were a little too large: the fruit had the appearance of a green almond, but on a close examination was found to be made somewhat in the shape of a heart. Another bore a flower or fruit, resembling the vesicles or membranes which encompass the fruit of the plant called *Alkakengas*. This Brazilian fruit is of the size of a small nut, and the outside is of a whitish yellow. It opens itself into four parts, and is composed of several similar coats, whose internal surface is of the colour of the finest carmine. These barks, or parts of the fruit or flower are so ranged, that the middle of the upper coat forms a covering to the edges, by which the four internal divisions are connected. These coats are eight in number, four external, and four internal, each of them about the thickness of the twentieth part of an inch: on the inside is fastened to the center, a small white ball, which is undoubtedly the pistillum; if it is a flower I am describing. I shewed it to a Portuguese, who could not inform me either of its name or properties.

The *caraguata* is a plant very common in these woods, and most of the rocks upon the coast are covered with it. It is likewise found in great plenty upon the branches of large trees, like the mistletoe upon our apple-trees and oaks. It has a long, sharp, prickly leaf, almost like that of the flags, which plant it resembles both in the shape of its leaves and their situation, as they all come out from the root: but this produces a round stem furnished with some leaves that are of the colour of the finest carnation, as is likewise the tip of some of the internal leaves of the tuft, which are nearest to the stem. At the top of this stem are produced spikes of flowers of a lively red, which are succeeded by a kind of fruit half an inch long, of the thickness of a large quill, and of a violet colour. It contains a white viscous substance full of seeds, which are flattish, reddish, and very small. I should imagine, that the *caraguata* is a species of the algæ or flags. In a narrow path traced out near the border of the woods, we found some plants called by the Brazilians *juquiri*, and *caaco*, and by us *sensitive*. Of these we saw



two forts; that which I am going to speak of, produces stems about two feet high, full of branches, and striated, nearly quadrangular, of a green colour, and pretty well defended with small yellowish prickles. The leaves are stationed oppositely upon the pliant branches: the prone disk is of a whitish green, the supine disk of a pale green. From the length of the stem several branches push out, whose extremities are ornamented with a small round head, which is hairy, and of a whitish purple. This is the flower, which is succeeded by a husk or small pod, crooked, and of a chestnut colour; when ripe, it is covered with small white hairs.

The second sort does not rise to any great height from the ground; I have only seen it in the sandy lands along the coast: it seems to creep as it were, and does not differ from the former. Both of them shut their leaves and let their branches fall, as if they were blasted, almost at the instant they are touched with the hand. The next moment they appear again in their full vigour. It is from this circumstance, no doubt, that they have obtained the names of *the chaste herb*, *herba casta*, *mimosa*. The leaves when eaten are a deadly poison, which can only be counteracted by eating the root itself. The same leaves, when applied as a cataplasim, are a cure for scrophulous humours.

The soil of St. Catherine's island, and the coasts of the continent are so prodigiously fertile, that the best fruit grows there in abundance almost without culture. The forests abound with odoriferous shrubs. The road affords a very great variety of excellent fish. The figures of those, to which our seamen have given the names of *Balaou*, *Lune*, *Brune*, *Lame d'épée*, *Crapaux de mer*, &c. may be seen in the plates. The long beak by which the *Balaou* is distinguished induced me to name it the *Beccassine de mer*, or snipe-fish. The extremity of this beak which is very solid, and as hard as that of a bird, is about a quarter of an inch in length, and of the colour of the finest vermillion. Its body is almost transparent: a fillet or stripe of greenish blue runs from the gill, to the tail: its scales are so fine that they are hardly

discernable. Its flesh is firm, and has an excellent flavour. This Lune, or moon-fish, appears to be covered with a sheet of silver.

The *Lame d'épée*, or sword-blade, could hardly have a name better adapted to its figure. The *Crapauv de mer*, or porcupine fish, might have been called sea-urchins their body being covered with prickles about two lines in length. In the species which approached the nearest to the ordinary shape of fishes, the jaw was armed with teeth, which were pretty large and flat like the canine-teeth in the human species, and was not unlike the human mouth even in the lips.

We did not catch any beautiful shell-fish here; the only one deserving notice was a helmet shell, which was at least eight inches in diameter. We met with a soldier-fish, and some small sea-horses. Our fishing was always accompanied with fear; on account of the sharks which very much infest this road.

The sharks taken by us, a specimen of which is exhibited in the plates, were not of an extraordinary size; they were of that species called the dog-fish. On an attentive examination of their rows of teeth, we thought they amounted to seven in number, instead of six, which are generally attributed to them. They were flat, triangular, sharp, and their edges were serrated. They did not appear to be firmly fixed in the jaw like those of other animals. They were moveable, opening and shutting like the fingers, in such a manner that each row in recovering its situation lay over the next to it, so that the upper row bending towards the inner part of the gullet, filled up the vacuity or interval between the lower row of teeth. They are disposed like the slates of a roof, or, perhaps, like the leaves of an artichoke.

It is said that the shark is constantly preceded by another fish called the *Pilot*: we can affirm the contrary; at least we have several times seen sharks without this harbinger.

The pilot is among the number of beautiful and good sea fish. It is of a blue colour disposed in stripes; some of them to the number of six are of a fine blue, which upon the back is of a deep cast, but becomes gradually lighter as they verge towards



the belly. Four other stripes, together with the head and tail, are of a very clear blue, or of a white dashed with blue. The eyeball is of a fine gold colour, except the pupil which is black; the two forks of the tail are white.

I did not recollect this fish by the description given of it in M. Valmont de Bomare's dictionary of natural history. It seems rather to belong to some species of the *Remora*. Is he mistaken in this article, as he is in several others? Or have I been imposed upon by being told that a fish was called the *Pilot*, which has no title to that name? See the figure of it in the plate.

As we did not see any sharks preceded by pilots; so neither did we catch any one that had not upon it several sucking fishes fastened close to it about the head. The Brazilians call the sucking fish *Iperuquiba*, and *Piraquiba*, the Portuguese, *Piexepogador*. The largest that we caught was about eight inches long, and two and a half over in the broadest part. The upper part of the head, which is two inches long, is flat, resembling an ox's palate, furrowed across, and fastened to it in such a manner that the edges should not adhere. These furrows are armed with prickles so hard and solid, that when rubbed upon wood, they act as a fine file. By means of these, the sucking fish fastens himself so strongly about the gills and belly of the shark, that he suffers himself to be taken along with him. He cannot even be separated without a knife or some other instrument. The under jaw is longer than the upper. This fish has small eyes of a gold-coloured yellow, and the pupil is black. An infinite number of small tubercles, that are pretty solid, supply the place of teeth. Near each of the gills is a triangular fin about an inch long: there are two others near the belly, which unite at the place of insertion, and one under the belly and another upon the back, which extend from the middle of the body to the tail. Its skin is smooth and slippery like that of an eel, and of the colour of brown slate.

Many have mistaken the back of the sucking fish for the belly, on account of the part by which it fastens itself to the shark.

shark. I have observed it with all the attention I was master of, and am convinced of the mistakes of authors as to this particular; as appears by the plates.

One of our officers had a present made him of two young *Tucans*, called by some *Tulcan*, and by the Spaniards in the isthmus of America, *Preacher*, because this bird, it is said, perching on the top of a tree while others are asleep below, makes a noise with his tongue resembling words ill articulated, and spreads the sound on every side, lest the birds of prey should seize the opportunity of devouring the others while they are asleep.

The Toucan is pretty nearly of the size of a wood-pigeon; but stands higher on its legs, which are of a blueish grey as well as its feet, which are armed with pretty long claws; its tail is about four inches long, sometimes black, and rounded at the end; but usually variegated with blue, purple, and yellow upon a dark brown. The back and wings are of this last colour, except some black feathers in the wings. Its head, though very large, is very small in proportion to its bill, which is between seven and eight inches long from the place of insertion to the end. The upper part near the head is about two inches at the base, and as it lengthens forms a figure pretty nearly triangular, and at the same time convex at the upper part, the two lateral surfaces being a little raised and rounded. The upper one which forms the inside of the bill is hollow, having serrated edges or lips. The lower one is shaped like the upper, only it is rather concave underneath. These two are of an equal length, are inserted into each other, and grow gradually less towards the extremity, which is rather crooked and sharp underneath. The tongue is a whitish membrane almost as long as the bill, but very narrow and flat, and has the appearance of the point of a pen; its eyes are round, beautiful, lively, and sparkling, and are inserted into two bare cheeks, which are covered with a sky-coloured membrane. In some the iris is of a clear blue encircled with white, in others it is quite black. There



are different species of them, at least they differ from each other in the colour of their bill, and their feathers. The bill of some is green, having a black circle and two white spots near the root. That of others is black, the inside red, with a greenish yellow circle near the head. They are very common in this country. We were likewise assured that great numbers of pheasants were found here; but we saw none. The green parrots fly here in flocks like the sparrows in France. We killed great numbers of them, and found them to be as good as the pigeons in our dove-cotes. Lions, panthers, leopards, ounces, and tygers, infest the woods and make travelling dangerous. It is happily very seldom that they come near inhabited places. The water of the rivers is of an excellent quality. But all these advantages are defeated by the inconvenience arising from a very unwholesome air, which is probably the cause of the pale complexion of the white people who inhabit this country. From these woods, which the sun never penetrates, gross vapours arise without intermission, which form continually thick fogs on the tops of the mountains surrounding the island. The low grounds which are very marshy, are equally misty from between six and seven in the evening, till the sun disperses the vapours at eight the next morning. These vapours frequently smell like mud, and as there is no free circulation of air, they seem to disperse only to make room for others which succeed. This unwholesome atmosphere is undoubtedly corrected, at least in some measure, by the multitude of aromatic plants, whose sweet smell is perceived three or four leagues at sea when the wind sets off the shore. Our dogs informed us of our approach to land at this distance at least, by smelling towards that side for near half an hour. We were likewise regaled with the perfume. It is observable, that dogs are of great use on board a ship in discovering its approach to land. Ours never failed to go upon the fore-castle, where they turned their noses to smell on that side nearest the land, though at the distance sometimes of between five or six leagues, when the wind set towards us from the shore. They

would even give us notice of a sail, at the same distance, if to windward of us. They stayed there about half a quarter of an hour, and returned more than once to the place after they had quitted it.

Besides the birds already mentioned, we frequently met with *Criards*. The Portuguese give this name to a kind of crow, whose plumage is of a fine pale blue. These, they say, are the ravens of the country. Their shape is the same, and they are almost as unpalatable. The *Tiéperangas* are of the size of the thrush; their wings, tail, and part of their bill are of a deep brown; the rest of their plumage is of a beautiful vermilion tinged with carmine, and inclining to scarlet. They are called by some of our seamen Lorys, by others *Cardinals*; but this last name belongs to a bird of nearly the same shape, whose plumage is intirely red without any mixture of brown.

On the morning of our departure from St. Catherine's as we cast anchor when it was almost dark, we perceived all along the shrouds, haliards, and the rest of the tackling, a number of small moving lights, or rather small moveable lamp-glasses. Though we concluded that they were fire flies, our surprize was the greater as we had not seen any of them before. They had four wings, two of which were transparent like those of our common flies, and two opaque, smooth, brown and solid like the outer ones of the May-bug, and like those, serving as a case to inclose the under ones. The head is black, shaped like the trefoil, and furnished with two antennæ which are likewise black, four lines long, and seem to be composed of small horns inserted into each other by their points. The eyes which are placed near these antennæ, are round, black and firm as horn; they are sparkling and prominent, and of the size of the smallest poppy-seed. The body and legs which are six in number, are of a darkish brown. With the naked eye one may easily perceive six rings gradually decreasing in size from the neck to the extremity of the body, which terminates in a rounded point. These rings are as solid as those of which the body of the May-fly is composed. The largest ring which forms all the fore part of the body,



body, to which the legs are articulated, is something more than two lines broad, and two in length, and is covered with a down or light dust like the wings of butterflies. From this part, and from the head proceed rays of light, resembling that of the glow-worms which are seen in France during the summer season, and at the beginning of autumn.

I put one of these flies into a piece of paper when I went to bed, intending the next day to make a drawing of it. But when I was going to set about it, the fly was not to be found. It had gnawed its way through the paper, and made its escape. The day following, when I was laid down, I perceived a light in one of the places where I had put my books. I thought no more of the fire-flies, and imagined at first that this light proceeded from the lamp in the binnacle, which was near the window of my cabin; but perceiving the light change its place, I recollected that it must be the fly which had got away the preceding night. Having caught and inclosed it in a glass vessel, the next day I observed it at my leisure, and drew a sketch of it.

When we left Montevideo, we saw the same appearance upon the river of Plata, or *Rio de la Plata*, during the unexpected calm that happened on the day of our departure. As these diffused, a more brilliant and sparkling light than those of the island of St. Catherine, I put some of them with fresh grass into a glass vessel which I inclosed in another, and having placed it upon my table, fetched a book which I read with great ease without the assistance of any other light, though the print was very small.

The next morning I took one out of the vessel, and transfixing it with a pin, which I stuck into the table, I made a drawing of it.

It was four lines broad, and eleven and an half long including the cap of three lines which covered the head.

The body was furnished with four wings. The two upper ones were of a fine black velvet lace, having a streak of gold coloured yellow near the outward edge. This reached from the neck to two thirds of the length of the wing. The hood was  
intirely

intirely of the same colour, except a large black spot in the middle near the neck. This hood had the same motions as the head, which was round, and served it for an helmet: extending the breadth of a line beyond it, quite round. On the fore-part of the head, two black antennæ, as slender as a fine hair, and three lines in length, were placed above the eyes, which were black, not very prominent, and resembled the seed of the amaranth. Three small legs, equally black, came out from each side of the body; quite covered at the place of insertion, with very short, small, fine hair of a yellow orange colour. The hind part was composed of five rings, the two nearest the body, were black and covered with a short velvet shag; the two next were invested with golden hair, and the fifth, which was as broad as either of the other two taken together, and which also completed the termination of the body in a rounded point, was likewise beset with a black velvet shag, but rather longer than that of the other rings. These rings were not so firm as those which formed the body of the preceding fly; they bent under the slightest pressure of the finger. The first fly emitted scarce any rays of light but from the head; this diffused them from every part of its body, the head alone excepted. Those which I had kept close in fresh grass, lived four days, and preserved the splendor of their light with almost as much brilliancy as at first, even to the time of their death.

Before we quit the road of St. Catherine's, I shall mention a few circumstances relative to the Brazilians, which I learned from the first president of the supreme council of Rio Janeiro, whom I have spoken of above.

I did not see any bread made of corn, except at the Governor's of St. Catherine's. In every other house the Cassavi bread was substituted in its room. This is a kind of a baked paste made of the flower of the root of the Manioc, which is looked upon as a strong poison, when it is eaten raw. I have however seen children, who were employed in taking off the rind of it to make the Cassavi, eat it raw without finding any ill consequence.

Some



Some of the inhabitants used to roast it on the coals, then strip off the outside and eat it.

There was but one sort of Manioc, which I met with on the island of St. Catherine's, and about the houses on the continent. Laët, who is quoted in the collection of voyages published by the Abbé Prevot, affirms that there are several sorts of it, one in particular at Brazil, which is there called *Aypi*, and may be eaten raw without any danger. *Some nations*, adds he, *of the race of the Tapouyas eat likewise the common Manioc raw, which has the effect of poison on all other people : but these are not hurt by it, being accustomed to eat it from their infancy.* Those however, whom we saw eating it raw, were not of the race of the Tapouyas. They were white children born of Portuguese parents. The leaves of this Manioc come very near in shape to those of the Piony.

The roots are dried before the fire on hurdles, and then being scraped with sharp stones, are made into a kind of meal, the smell of which resembles that of starch. This meal is put into large pots, where it is stirred till it grows thick, as is done in France with the black wheat. When it is cold and become of the consistence of a stiff jelly, its taste differs little from that of white bread. What they provide for their cruizes and land expeditions is thoroughly baked, and is therefore firmer and harder for the convenience of carriage. It is sometimes boiled in broth, and makes a very nourishing dish, much like our rice-soup. These roots pounded or grated fresh, and before they have been exposed to the fire, yield a juice as white as milk, which, if it is but set in the sun, curdles like cheese, and becomes very good food with the least assistance of the fire. The method of scraping the Manioc roots with sharp stones, is an invention of the Brazilians, who are not at all acquainted with the mechanic arts of Europe. The Portuguese, who were born or merely settled on the island of St. Catherine's, and on the coast of the main-land, which encompasses it, use for this purpose a large wooden wheel, the points of which have on the outer surface a groove. This groove is covered with an iron grater, upon which  
the

the roots are placed, one person pressing them a little down, while another turns the wheel, which has the same effect as a tobacco grater. By this contrivance much time and labour is saved. But they did not preserve the white juice, which dropped from these roots as fast as they grated them, and falling into a small hole, ran off upon the ground. After this operation the roots are dried in order to be reduced to meal, and to make the Cassavi. But this is not their only use. The Brazilians make a drink of them. The process in making of which is very disgusting, as well as the liquor itself, to those who know how it is made. The females are employed in this business, especially the old women. Laët gives a particular description of the whole.

The laws of every country form the manners of its inhabitants; hence it is, the manners of different nations have so little resemblance to each other. The climate likewise contributes very much to produce this effect, it being evident that a law highly salutary in Norway may be equally pernicious in Guinea. The improvements introduced among those, which we call *civilized* nations, have also given rise to many laws unknown among, what we are pleased to call, *barbarous* nations.

Among the Brazilians, the girls before marriage not only give themselves up freely, and without any sense of shame, to unmarried men, but even their parents offer them to the first comer, and caress their lovers exceedingly; insomuch that perhaps there is not one girl who is a virgin at the time of her marriage. On the other hand, when they have once given their promise, which is the only ceremony on that occasion, they are no longer solicited, neither do they listen to any other addresses.

The only education they give their children is to make them expert in hunting, fishing, and war. They live peaceably notwithstanding among themselves, and very seldom have any private quarrels. If by chance any of them fall out and fight, they let them go on till they are satisfied; but as the law of re-



taliation is strictly observed among them, the man, who has wounded another, is wounded in the same manner by his relations, or if he has killed him, is killed in his turn by them. All this is done by consent of the relations on both sides, and without appeal. This law is probably the source of that implacable hatred they bear to their avowed enemies. If this rule was introduced among us, we should scarcely see so many quarrels ending in the effusion of human blood; our only weapons then would be our tongues and our pens.

It is an injustice to the Brazilians to consider them as the most cruel of all men against every other nation: they are only so to their avowed enemies: and excepting some few of certain nations whose ferocity approaches to that of wild beasts, perhaps from the continued insults of their neighbours, the Brazilians are very humane, particularly to strangers, whom they receive with great kindness, and in the manner related by Lery; the particulars of which are as follow.

If one has occasion to go oftener than once to the same habitation or village, one must take up one's lodging with the *Mouffacat*, or head of the Family; because the person to whom one goes first would be extremely offended at one's leaving him him to go to another. One must always lodge with the same person.

As soon as the traveller appears at the door, the *Mouffacat*, or whoever is master of the house, presses him to sit down on a hammock or bed of cotton, flung in the air, on which they leave him for some time without saying a word. They take this opportunity to assemble the women, who come and sit on the ground round the bed, with their hands over their eyes. They melt with joy; they weep, and in the midst of their tears address a thousand flattering compliments to their guest: "How good! How valiant you are! What obligations we have to you! What trouble you have undergone in coming hither! How beautiful you are! How happy you have made us by coming hither;" and  
others

others to the same effect. If the stranger wishes to impress on them a good opinion of himself, he must appear to be affected in his turn. Lery affirms, that he has seen Frenchmen really affected and crying, as he expresses it, *like calves*. But he advises those, whose hearts do not happen to be susceptible of such tender emotions (that is to say, to the shame of us, Europeans, who pique ourselves, but with so little reason, on having more humanity than the Brazilians) to sigh, or at least pretend to sigh. Is not this reproaching us in few words, with having only the outside of politeness and hospitality, while the Brazilians are really polite and hospitable?

After the first salutation, the Mouffacat, who has retired into a corner on pretence of making an arrow, or some other business, as if he was not taking any notice of what passed, comes near the bed, asks the guest how he does, receives his answer, and enquires the reason of his coming. If the guest understands the language, he must answer all these questions. After this, if the *Mair* (for that is the name they give to Europeans) came on foot, they bring him water, and the women wash his feet and legs. They then inquire if he is hungry or thirsty. If he answers, that he is both, they immediately set upon the table as much fish, fowl, venison, and other provisions as they have in the house, with the liquors of the country.

Should the guest choose to pass the night there, the Mouffacat not only causes a fine white *inis* (or hammock) to be prepared for him; but, notwithstanding the continual heat of the climate at Brazil, makes a pretence of the dampness of the night to kindle three or four small fires round the hammock, which are kept up all the time the *Mair* is asleep with a sort of small fan, called *Tatapecoun*, which resembles very much our fire-screens.

In the evening, says Lery, who had been in this situation himself, they remove their children out of the way; so careful are they to get rid of every thing that may interrupt the stranger's repose.



As soon as he wakes in the morning, the Mouffacat comes to inquire if he has slept well, and how he finds his health; and though the stranger by his answer appear ever so well satisfied, he cries, "Go to sleep again, my child, you have occasion for it: I am sure you were very much fatigued yesterday." It is customary with Europeans to make them some presents upon these occasions, and no man ought to stir abroad without carrying something for that purpose about him. For this reason travellers provide themselves with some trifling commodities, such as knives, scissars, tweezers (which last are in great request, both men and women being accustomed to pull out the hair from all parts of their bodies, except their eyebrows) combs, little looking-glasses, bracelets, glass beads and buttons, and even fish-hooks.

Some doubts perhaps may be entertained in respect to the conduct of the Brazilians as represented in this account; but these will cease, when it is known, that these men, whom we look upon as barbarians on account of their cruelty towards their enemies, never eat any other men but such as are their declared enemies: that they bear a strong affection to their friends, and allies; and that they would suffer themselves to be cut in pieces, to defend those with whom they live in amity from the smallest inconvenience.

It is not to strangers alone that the Brazilians shew themselves tender and affectionate. When they happen to be afflicted with disorders, they treat each other with the most humane attention and regard. If any one is wounded, his neighbour immediately offers himself to suck the wound, and performs every other office of kindness with the same zeal.

Yet religion has no share in regulating the conduct of the Brazilians. They have no notion of a Deity: they do not adore any thing, and their language has not even any word to express the name or idea of a God. In their fabulous histories, there is nothing to be found that has any relation to their origin or to  
the

the creation of the world. They have only a kind of story, that seems to refer to the general idea of a deluge, which destroyed the whole race of mankind except one brother and sister, who peopled the earth again. They unite some idea of power to thunder, which they call *Tupan*, for they are afraid of it, and believe, that they derive from it the knowledge of agriculture. They have not the most distant conception that this life is to be followed by another, and they have no terms to express heaven or hell. It seems, however, that they have a notion of something remaining of them after their death; for they have a tradition, that several of their people have been changed into genii, and dæmons, and that they rejoice and dance continually in charming fields planted with all sorts of trees.

The Indians of Brazil are passionately fond of dogs of the European breed; and they bring them up for sporting. Those of the country, though they resemble ours, are never broke of their savage and carnivorous appetite. A Portuguese made us a present of two, one grown up, the other so young that he could scarcely walk. We were obliged to get rid of them both in time, for it was found that no correction could keep them from the sheep and fowls. But the Governor had given M. de Bougainville a brace of pointers out of the same bitch, about four months old, and of the best breed in Portugal. When we were landed at the Malouines, and went out a shooting, they pointed naturally without any teaching. M. de Bougainville carried them to France, and made a present of them to a nobleman at court.

The 15th we sailed out of the road, and continued our route the 16th and 17th, without meeting any thing remarkable.

The 18th, in the morning, we saw a great number of birds, which our seamen called *Dadins*, and some *Quebranta-buessos* or Ospreys. One of the latter flying too near our vessel was shot, and taken up out of the sea.

It is an opinion which prevails in the South Sea, that the *Quebranta-buessos* never appear but a day or two before a storm



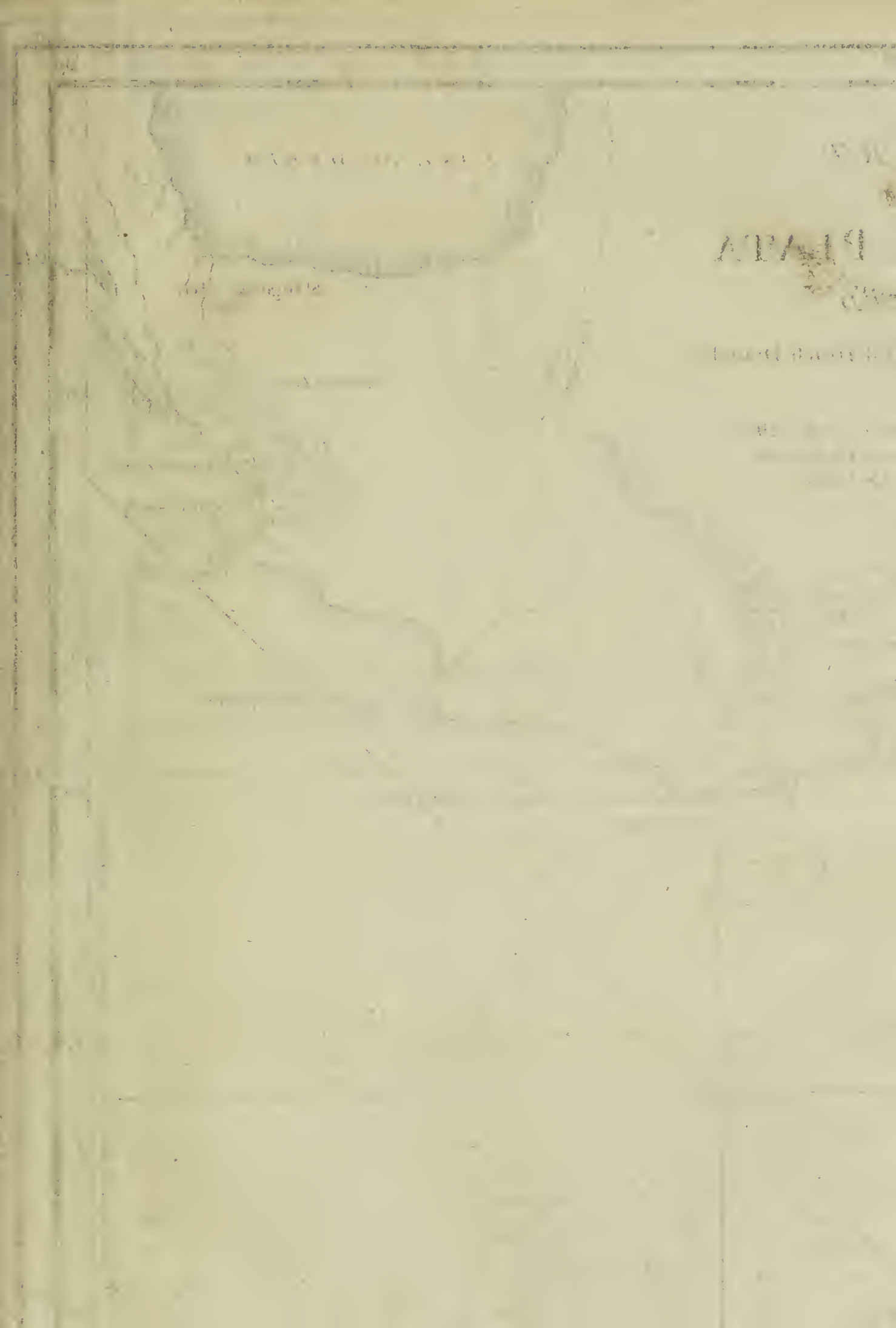
or very bad weather. But we saw many of them in fine weather, when it was what the sailors call *a long sea*, and no storm followed. The same thing is said of the Halcyons or King-fishers, or as they are otherwise called *Puants*. Whether it is that they really have a bad smell, or whether it is, that mariners have an aversion to seeing them, as they look upon them to be birds of ill omen, it is true we never saw any King-fishers but we had hard weather afterwards.

The Quebranta-hueffos are frequently seen to stoop and hover on the surface of the water, skimming the waves, and following the direction of them, without appearing to move their wings, which they constantly keep open and spread out. When they do not float on the waves, they fly round the ship at a small distance.

The body of this bird is about the size of a large capon, but its long close feathers give it the appearance of being as big as a Turkey. Its neck is short, and somewhat bent: its head large, and its beak very singular, such as I have sketched it out in the plate.

The beak is divided as it were into four or five pieces. The tail of the bird is short, its back high, legs low, feet black and webbed, with three claws before, and a fourth very short behind, each of which are furnished with black talons, which are blunt, and not very long.

There are several kinds of Quebranta-hueffos. Some of them have a whitish plumage, spotted with a dark brown, or red; in others, the breast, the under part of the wings, the lower part of the neck, and the whole head, are all extremely white; but the back, the outside of the wings, and the upper part of the neck, are of a dark red, speckled with a few spots of a blueish grey colour. The one we shot was of this kind. They may perhaps be all of one species, and the differences may serve only to distinguish the male from the female. Their wings are very long. Seven feet two inches and a half was the length of our bird's wings, measuring from the extreme points  
of







# ACHART OF RIO DE LA PLATA COMPILED

from the Spanish, French, and Dutch Draughts.

NB. The Common Tides rise 4 Feet, but with a S.W. or S.E. Wind they rise one Fathom. The Currents follow the direction of the Winds.

PLAN  
of the CITY of  
BUENOS-AYRES.

- References.
- |                         |   |
|-------------------------|---|
| A. Cathedral Church     | F. Hospital                               |
| B. Convent of the Mercy | G. Bishop's House                         |
| C. Town House           | H. Jesuits Convent before their expulsion |
| D. Franciscan Friars    | I. St. John's Church                      |
| E. Dominican Friars     |   |

Scale 0 20 40 60 80 100 Fathoms



of the feathers of one wing to those of the other. These birds are found at the distance of more than 300 leagues from any land, neither is it known from whence they come, or in what places they build their nests.

On the 21st in the morning, the colour of the sea appearing different, we resolved to sound, and found bottom at the depth of fifteen fathoms. The end of the bank, which is at St. Mary's Point, may possibly make this bottom.

According to our observations, the currents from the line tend to the South when the sun is in the Southern point.

On the 22d, about two o'clock, we saw land pretty clearly. We steered immediately towards it, in order to discover it well; the tides carried us S. S. E. from 14 to 15 minutes. This circumstance must be attended to, in making the entrance of Rio de la Plata. The course should be to the North.

As we came near the land, we judged it to be the most Eastern point of St. Mary's cape. Perceiving then some lands more to the South, we turned the head of the ship South West  $\frac{1}{4}$  W.: and at six o'clock discovered the island of *Lobos*: so called from its being inhabited only by sea wolves, which are here met with in great abundance. As we came nearer to it we steered South  $\frac{1}{4}$  South West, in order to keep a league and a half out to sea, that we might avoid a ridge of rocks Eastward of this island. This ridge extends near a league out at sea. As it was dark, we did not perceive the mouth of the canal, which forms the island and port of the Maldonnados; so that we advanced nearly two leagues too far up the *Rio de la Plata*, or river Plata, in which we cast anchor at eight o'clock in the evening.

On the morning of the 23d, our yawl went on shore with Messrs. de Bougainville, de Nerville, de Belcourt, l'Huillier, and Alexander Guyot, our second Captain, to acquaint the Commander of the fort of the island of Maldonnado of our anchorage. They asked leave to supply themselves with fresh water and provisions, which the Commandant gave them in the politest



politeſt manner. He was even ſo kind as to tell us, that we had not anchored ſo well as we might have done at the mouth of the canal leading to the port: that the anchorage at the port was by no means ſafe, and that we ſhould do very well to quit it; which we accordingly reſolved to do, as ſoon as the weather ſhould permit, and the Commandant ſhould ſend us a coaſting pilot.

The whole coaſt diſcovers nothing to the eye but low banks of ſand, ſome few remote eminences only appearing, which are called the mountains of Maldonnado, and are at the diſtance of ſome leagues from the coaſt. There are no trees to be ſeen, but a great quantity of cattle, very large oxen, and horſes. All the trade indeed of the country of Plata conſiſts in ſilver, and the hides of oxen.

On coming from the Eaſt, to enter into the Rio de la Plata, the iſland of Lobos is ſeen W. S. W. of the compaſs.

The weather had been calm, very fine, and very hot ever ſince the morning. Many of the crew employed themſelves in angling; and no ſooner was the line thrown into the ſea, than it was brought up again with a fiſh. Sometimes there were as many fiſh caught as there were hooks to the line. The fiſh were only of four or five different kinds. Some of them were what the Spaniards call *Viagrios*, and our failors *Machoirans*. The others were Carangues or *Guarencas*, dog and cat-fiſh of different ſizes, and ſome ſharks. We caught one cat-fiſh, one dog-fiſh, and two young ſharks.

The Machoiran, or beard-fiſh, has its belly flat, and ſome beards, as the little barbel; the head large, the ſkin covered with ſmall brown and almoſt imperceptible ſcales, nearly reſembling thoſe of the tench; at the root of the fins neareſt the head, there is a ſmall ferrated bony proceſs, the teeth of which are inclined towards the body. This proceſs is as long as the fin, and has the ſame motions. When the fiſh wants to defend himſelf againſt other fiſh, or againſt the fiſherman, he puſhes out theſe proceſſes, and  
thruſts

thrusts them into the bodies of other fish, into the fisherman's hand, or, into any thing that is near him, even into wood if he can, to which he sometimes fastens himself by the stroke. His puncture is venomous, so that fishermen take care to guard against it. I know not whether there are any larger than those we caught. The biggest of these was one foot and a half long, and four inches broad. It is a very well tasted fish.

The Guarenca is an excellent flat fish. We caught such a quantity of a kind of barbel fish, that after the whole crew had been supplied with it for this day and the next, the remainder of it was salted and dried, in the same manner as the dried cod is prepared at Newfoundland. The largest of these barbels, was of the same size in every way as the beard-fish, described above. The cat-fish, and the dog-fish, are kinds of sharks or sea dogs; they resemble them so much in their figure that they are not easily distinguished: they were about two feet and a half long.

About three o'clock in the morning of the 24th, there arose a violent South wind. At five o'clock the wind being somewhat abated, we put ourselves in readiness to set sail for Montevideo. The wind rising again at seven o'clock, we cast our best bower, by ten fathoms, on a muddy bottom of fine sand, and remained part of the day in this state.

M. de Bougainville, trusting to the mildness of the weather, had been gone ever since the morning, to the Fort Maldonnado, with the same persons who had accompanied him the preceding evening; with a design to view the country, as well as to procure fresh provisions. Fortunately for them they returned, between six and seven in the evening. We had just hoisted our anchor on the cat-head, on the prospect of a calm: no sooner was this done than a most violent storm arose, blowing from the South West part of the horizon. It is not possible to behold a more beautiful sight, than that we enjoyed, from the continual numberless flashes of lightning, which shot from between the clouds as they rose upon the horizon, which was all on fire; so

R

that



that fireworks the most elegantly contrived, the best kept up, and the most diversified, could not possibly exhibit any thing to be compared to what we now saw in the Heavens for the space of an hour. We did not then suspect, that this prospect would soon give way to one of a much less pleasing kind; from which, our captain, who was better acquainted with the danger and the consequences, was all this time endeavouring to shelter us, by taking all the necessary precautions against a storm.

We thought the storm would pass off along side of us, as it appeared to be going that way; but in an instant a most violent wind arose, and the thunder and lightning came upon us at the same time. We passed the whole night striving against the impetuosity of the wind, and the roarings of an extremely boisterous and angry sea, which broke in upon us.

This wind is called in the country *Pamperos*, because it comes from the plains of Pampas, beyond Buenos Ayres. These plains extend as far as the Cordeleiras mountains, which divide them from Chili. They are at least three hundred leagues in length, without the intervention of any wood, or eminence, to check the violence of this wind; which swells the river Plata, raising its waves as high as mountains, so as often to destroy the vessels in that river, breaking them upon the coast opposite the wind. The anchorage where we were was extremely unsafe, from the vicinity of the island of Maldonnado, and the circumjacent coasts, all bordered with rocks and sands. Thirty years ago, an English vessel laden with piasters, or pieces of eight, was lost in this place. The inhabitants of the island, in the neighbourhood of the spot where the wreck happened, are still endeavouring to this day, to recover part of the cargo. On the evening before our arrival, they had taken up with the drag, two thousand four hundred of these piasters.

The wind *Pamperos* is much more frequent in winter than in summer, and always blows strong, which makes the Rio de la Plata a dangerous road. This river is fit only for the trade  
of

of piasters and oxen, the largest of which are sold here for five pieces of eight, or five and twenty livres of French coin. In general, they are sold for three piasters, or fifteen livres. It is very difficult to get wood here; not only because it is very scarce, but also because the little there is of it, is found a long side the rivers, the only places of shelter for tigers, leopards, and other wild beasts, which are here found in great number, much more fierce and larger than those of Africa and the East Indies. Figs and peaches are to be found all the way from Maldonnado and Montevideo to Buenos Ayres.

The Pámperos blew with equal violence the whole night; and the sea was terrible. Notwithstanding the continual rolling and pitching of the ship, I was fallen into a pretty sound sleep, when I was suddenly awakened by a violent shake the vessel received, which made it crack in all its parts, as if it was breaking against the rocks. It was then near five o'clock in the morning. I jumped out of bed, opened my window, and asked the helms-man if we had struck against any rock. He answered, that we had not yet struck, but that the ship dragged her anchors, and that we were in a fair way for it. He told me that the cable of our best bower had failed; and that the other anchor was loosened from the ground. This was the reason of the violent shake we had felt; our only hope was now in the sheet anchor, which we had just dropped.

I dressed myself, and went upon deck, and I perceived indeed we had dragged so much, that the coasts towards which the wind and the waves were driving us, did not seem to be more than half a league distant. But our sheet anchor luckily keeping her hold, we continued in the same manner, labouring very hard for our preservation, till about six in the evening, when the wind and storm began to cease.

As they were working the ship yesterday evening, a pulley broke. A sailor received a stroke on the forehead from one of the splinters, and presently after fainted away. The surgeons gave it as their opinion, that the stroke had only grazed the



part, from the small quantity of blood lost, and the little apparent contusion. The man was pretty quiet to-day, complaining of nothing more than a great head-ach, which was looked upon as the effect of the shock. He was blooded twice and very carefully attended, having even had a bed made for him in the cabin.

During the tempest, the sea was agitated quite to its bottom: two or three hours after the storm began, the sea formed such deep cavities, that one would have thought we were going to touch the bottom; and the billows followed so close that they did not allow us time to breathe. I saw more than once the end of the main mast yard, which indeed was brought very low, dip three feet or thereabouts into the wave, part of which often broke upon the deck. Our situation was more dangerous from our being so near the coast. Our sea officers, who were all able men, having had the command of ships, and privateers, were so sensible of the danger that threatened us, that most of them were considering how they should save themselves from the shipwreck. The danger appeared even so urgent to them, that the guns were already disposed so as to serve instead of anchors, in case the cables should happen to break.

The night of the 26th was fine, and the wind having shifted to the North, blowing a gentle gale, about four o'clock we began to prepare; and we set sail about seven.

On the 27th at sun rise, the land nearest to us bore N. N. E. about four leagues distant: and the land most to the South West, bore N. W. five degrees North of us. We sounded the whole night from hour to hour, and even more frequently, and found sometimes at twelve, sometimes at thirteen fathoms, a muddy bottom. Those who sail along this road, will do well to sound as often as they can, especially if it is the first time of their going to Montevideo or Buenos Ayres. The river Plata is extremely dangerous, from the number and extent of its sand banks, which leave but a very narrow channel, for the passage of ships, and that very serpentine. The bank called the Bank  
of

of the English advances near five leagues from the coast; and the islands we meet with, form flats, projecting considerably.

All this coast is flat, except the part where the Maldonnado mountains are, which are of a moderate height, and at a small distance.

On the 28th we tacked about towards the island of Flora, till we came within about a league and a half from it, and till we were two leagues clear of the coast. One must take care not to go too near either of these places, on account of the ridges of rocks, which extend pretty near a league out at sea. At nine o'clock we were about two leagues distant from Montevideo. Half an hour afterwards we dispatched M. Alexander Guyot in our yawl, to give notice of our arrival to the Governor.

About half an hour after four, as we were going to sail into the bay, the captain of a Spanish vessel, named Saint Barbe, came on board of us with offers of service from the Governor, and in order to pilot us. About five o'clock we cast anchor in this road a little beyond the Spanish vessel, in three fathoms depth of water, on a muddy bottom; after which we saluted the citadel with twelve shots, which were returned shot for shot.

The first days we lay at anchor were taken up in settling with the Governor of Montevideo, what we had to do during our stay. He seemed first to start several difficulties, not only with regard to allowing us the liberty of fishing along the coast, but also to the suffering our longboat and yawl to come on shore. He required that we should give him previous notice every time we wanted to land, that he might post guards at the place where we should put to shore, with orders to wait till our longboat or yawl went back, to prevent us from carrying on any kind of trade whatever.

Not foreseeing any of these difficulties, we had sent our small boat a fishing at the foot of the mount, the very next day, after we had cast anchor. The Governor who received intelligence of this, sent two dragoons of the garrison, to take the men into custody, together with the boat and goods, in case they should  
have



have brought any on shore. Mess. de Bougainville, de Nerville, Guyot, and myself, came into the palace, immediately after this order had been given, which the Governor communicated to M. de Bougainville. The Governor, apprehending certainly that he could not express himself properly in French, spoke in Spanish, and had a provincial, settled in this city for fifteen years past, for his interpreter. This provincial explained the Governor's intentions to us in such a manner, as induced us to believe, that he was not inclined to do us all the services he had offered, and we had reason to expect from him. This however, was far from being his way of thinking; of which we were thoroughly convinced by the sequel of our conference.

The order given, which seemed to agree with the provincial's interpretation, was far from being agreeable to M. de Bougainville, who expressed his resentment of it to the Governor, nearly in the following terms: It is very surprizing, Sir, and at the same time very mortifying for us, to meet with difficulties among our friends the Spaniards, which we have not experienced among the Portuguese, with whom we have just been at war. I will set sail immediately, and give notice of this to the King my master. The Governor replied, that he did not intend to disoblige us, but on the contrary, to do us all the service in his power; that he was not the master: that the laws and orders of his court were, not to allow any kind of trade to be carried on by ships which were not Spanish, or privileged for that purpose by the court of Spain; and even to put a stop to any trade carried on by the Spaniards themselves for other nations; that a frigate belonging to the East India Company, which had anchored in the same port three years before, had made no scruple of submitting to what he had just proposed. M. de Bougainville answered, there is a wide difference, between a trading frigate, and a King's frigate of war. We have no trading commodities on board; and are come here only with intent to take in some refreshments, and to wait for the Sphinx, which we have parted from, and which we have appointed to meet in the Rio de la Plata.

Plata. As soon as you give me your word, replied the Governor, that no goods shall be disembarked; you are welcome to land or send on shore as often as you please. But the custom established by the laws, being to send a soldier or guard wherever the boat puts into shore, I desire you would not take it amiss that I comply with it; it is for your quiet as well as mine; for I do not chuse to lay myself open to any blame from my court. In every other respect, you may depend on my doing every thing in my power to oblige you: for I am prompted by my own inclination, as well as by the orders I have received, to treat the French with the same civility as the Spaniards. Matters being thus softened on both sides, the dragoons were ordered to the boat, and went accordingly.

The Governor afterwards desired M. de Bougainville to permit him to take a copy of the orders he had received from the king of France for the command of the two frigates, because he was obliged to send it to the court of Spain, together with a circumstantial account of our anchorage. M. de Bougainville readily complied with his request: the rest of the conversation was carried on amicably, and we parted good friends.

The Governor had more reasons than one for acting as he did: he told us some of them, so that it was not difficult to guess at the rest. Don Joseph Joachim de Viana (which was the Governor's name) being now, in 1763, about forty-eight years of age, knight of the order of Calatrava, brigadier of the troops of his Catholic Majesty, was intrusted by the king of Spain with the command of the troops sent into Paraguay against the Indians, who had revolted, as it is said, at the instigation of the Jesuits. The Jesuits then held the sway in that country, and had refused to submit themselves to the measures taken by the courts of Spain and Portugal, to fix the limits of their respective possessions. Don de Viana, conducted this business, and all his operations were crowned with success, notwithstanding the obstacles of all kinds which the Jesuits threw in his way. This certainly was not the method to



obtain their good will, and indeed he knew that they were not his friends.

At Montevideo they have a convent, in which there are but two priests, and one layman, who as well as their emissaries, always keep their eyes open upon what passes, and are continual spies upon the conduct of the Governor of this city. The Governor of Buenos Ayres, whose power extends over the whole Paraguay, favours the Jesuits in every particular, and scruples not to be their slave, and the mean instrument of their revenge. The Jesuits knowing the misunderstanding there is between these two Governors, which perhaps they themselves have excited, would not fail, if Don de Viana was in any ways capable of conducting himself in a censurable manner, to take advantage of any little circumstance of that kind; and acquaint the Governor of Buenos Ayres with it: Don de Viana is thoroughly convinced of this. Being a man of great merit in every respect; a man of sense, abounding in military knowledge, and distinguished by probity; having none of that pride which the Spaniards are sometimes reproached with, he has acquired the esteem and respect of all who know him. All persons are unanimous in his praise, from which even the Jesuits themselves cannot dissent, at least publickly.

There are more than sixty Jesuits in the convent of Buenos Ayres, which is said to be very beautiful. The convent at Montevideo is but very small, without any remarkable appearance, distinguished from the houses of the rest of the inhabitants only by a bell, fixed under an arch, about three feet high, raised on one of the extremities of the top of the roof. I never saw the inside, though the Jesuits had sent me invitations two or three times to come and see them. The provincial, already spoken of, first made the proposal to me at the Governor's, and I came into it, promising to go the next day, or a few days after. A Spanish officer who was present told M. Bougainville of it, representing to him that it was not proper a Frenchman should pay a visit to the Jesuits, after what had lately happened at Buenos Ayres.

Ayres. He related the fact to Mr. de Bougainville, and taking me aside afterwards; you are a true Frenchman, said he, and you have just been promising to go and see the Jesuits. You must either break your word, or give up your pretensions to that title. About six weeks ago, one of them preaching at Buenos Ayres, when I was present, ran out in invectives against the Kings of France and Portugal, the Republic of Genoa, and against the other powers who have expelled the society: you cannot surely think of going to see them after this intelligence; besides, the visit would by no means be agreeable to the Governor. The last expression made me suspect that there was some partiality in this officer's discourse: so that I resolved to suspend my opinion. On coming away from the Governor's, M. de Bougainville repeated this caution to me as coming from the same officer; I promised not to go near the society, and kept my word. The officer told me in particular, the invectives the Jesuits had used against the King of France, which were so remarkably indecent, that I have thought it best to pass them over in silence.

Two days after I found an opportunity of coming at the truth. I inquired about it of two Spanish officers, who spoke the French language well, and who were going to embark on board the Saint Barbe Frigate, in order to return to Spain. One of them was a colonel, the other a captain. The captain's name was Simoneti. They each of them confirmed the fact, and added, that as the Governor of Buenos Ayres made it a point to protect the Jesuits, he took no notice of this rash and impudent discourse; but that some persons of quality and distinction, whose probity was well known, had ordered a particular account of it to be made out, and sent to the court of Spain; and that they were the officers commissioned to carry a copy of it to the said court\*.

Two

\* These officers left Montevideo the same day that we did. The frigate upon which they embarked was commanded by Don Pedro de Flores, laden with 15 or 1,800,000 piasters, bulls hides, and other merchandize. She had set sail from Cadiz in 1755, bound to the coast of Guinea, fitted out on the English account, and  
S destined



Two days after this conversation, I went to visit the chaplain of a Spanish frigate, which had been lying at anchor in the port of Buenos Ayres for five months; I knew he was much inclined to the Jesuits. It was even said pretty openly that he had been sent by them to Montevideo, in order to buy up any trifles he might find on board our frigate. He indeed bought up every thing we would sell him.

After the first compliments had passed between us, he asked me why I had not been to see the Jesuits, according to their invitation, and my promise. I told him it was true I had promised, but that I had been informed that one of those fathers, had lately spoken very ill of the king of France, my master, in a sermon preached at Buenos Ayres; and, if this was a fact, it was not proper that I, who was a true Frenchman, should pay a visit to the brethren of so rash a preacher. You certainly heard the sermon, said I.—I did: and it is certain that the Father did not express himself in the most cautious manner.—What said he then particularly of the King of France?—That he was a tyrant, a persecutor of the church, and many other things. But we should surely forgive them, for this is nothing more than the effect of their resentment having been expelled the kingdom of France.

We had scarce finished this conversation, when two of the three Jesuits of Montevideo came into the room where we were, the Abbé, M. Mauclair our surgeon, and myself. After having bowed to us, one of the Jesuits, addressing himself to me, said he was very glad to see me; and that in consequence of what he had heard from Joseph (this was the name of the provincial before mentioned) he and his brethren had expected me for two days. He afterwards asked me why I had not kept my word; I answered that

destined to carry over negroes to Buenos Ayres; but not meeting at Cape Verd with the English vessel from which she was to have received them, Don Pedro de Flores continued his course, and sailed into the Rio de la Plata. Here he had remained ever since that time, in order to avoid running the risk of being taken prisoner by the English during the last war, as he was laden for Spain. From the observations he had collected for making a chart of this river, joined to my own, the chart inserted in this work has been traced.

that I had just been giving my reason to the Abbé, who might explain it to him. I am not surprised, said he, I know the Benedictines do not think properly, and that they are not our friends. I told him he was mistaken, and that if they did not think properly, they would be his friends. As he did not like my answer, he made no reply; but took his leave of the company, and went away with his companion.

Between four and five in the evening, we spied a sail. We judged immediately by her course, that she was making for Buenos Ayres. But as we expected from day to day the arrival of the Sphinx sloop, which we had appointed to meet in the Rio de la Plata, many of us imagined this was she. As she advanced, and came more within our notice, we were so far confirmed in our opinion, as almost to persuade ourselves that we were assured of it. Notwithstanding the uncertainty, M. de Bougainville dispatched the long boat with the lieutenants, Donat and Le Roi, to pilot her. The signals were agreed upon, powder and other necessary articles were given to put them in execution, and they set off about seven o'clock. The night grew very dark, the winds contrary, and the sea rather high, so that not having perceived their signals, we grew very anxious about them. The Sphinx had discovered us by the signals agreed upon, and in order not to lose sight of us, had done nothing but ply to windward, and make several tacks, which together with the darkness had prevented our long boat from boarding her: this she did however at midnight. The Sphinx then anchored, and setting sail the next morning, being the first of January, she came up, and cast her anchor near us about nine o'clock in the morning. The joy we had at seeing her, after a separation of more than two months, may readily be conceived. M. de la Gyraudais had been previously told of the defect in the maps, with respect to the bearing of the coast of Brazil; but though we had ourselves been upon our guard, we were very near running aground upon the bank which is not marked in the French charts. This bank lay in his course as it had done in ours;



nor are the Abrolhos made to extend so far upon the charts as they really do: all these circumstances contributed to make us uneasy, on account of her delay, especially after the stay we had made at the island of St. Catherine.

As soon as the Sphinx had cast her anchor, M. de la Gyraudais came to us in our long boat, and told us he had been obliged to put in at Togny on the coast of Brazil, because notwithstanding they had been apprised of the errors in the charts, yet they had fallen upon the Abrolhos at a time when they thought themselves at least thirty leagues distant from them. They found themselves stuck upon them in the middle of the night; it happened luckily that the weather was calm, and that the rock upon which they struck was of rotten stone.

The Sphinx being fast upon this rock, in order to avoid the dreadful consequences of a wreck, they quickly hoisted out the fishing boat they had, put the long boat and the yawl to sea; and having carefully examined the ship, they recovered a little from their apprehensions, when they found she had received no damage.

The next trouble they had was to disengage the Sphinx from the rock: as soon as it was day light, they found themselves surrounded with rocks of the same kind; and at the distance of half a quarter of a league, a vessel lying on her side, without masts. M. de la Gyraudais imagining they were then upon the Abrolhos, and that land could not be far off, sent the boat towards the shore for assistance. They met with several canoes of fishermen, negroes and Indians. They spoke to them in the Portuguese language, and six of them agreed to go on board the Sphinx, where they were well feasted. They promised to give them all the help in their power. Two of them were kept on board, and the other four dispatched in the boat, to bring up their comrades from the coast. They came back the next day attended by a great number of canoes. With their assistance, the Sphinx was at last disengaged from the rock, after having rested upon it for three days. M. de la Gyraudais came  
off

off with the loss of the fishing boat only. The negroes piloted him as far as Togny, where the inhabitants treated him and his crew, for six days, with the greatest humanity, and as well as if they had themselves been of this country : although they are most of them negroes or Brazilians.

After this interview, we went to Montevideo to pay our compliments to the Governor upon the new year, not knowing that it was customary in this country to defer this ceremony to the sixth day of the month, the Epiphany. The Governor was holding a council for the nomination of officers of justice. Being informed that, after the finishing of this business, he was to go with all the retinue to the parish church, which they call the cathedral, we went to the spot, and waited for him upon our legs a whole hour, under the shade of a house, conversing with some officers of the garrison. At half an hour after twelve, he made his appearance in the midst of the new officers of justice, who had each of them large white wands in their hands, which they made use of, as walking sticks. He crossed the square, which is very large, in the middle of these officers, all ranged in one line, having their large black cloaks on, and their small sticks ; as the Oviodore of the island of St. Catherine. We followed them into church. Mass was performed by the priest, whom they called le Signor Vicari ; when this was over, we paid our compliments to the Governor, who invited us to dinner. As we were already engaged to dine with him the next day by appointment, M. de Bougainville thought proper to decline the acceptance of this kind invitation, and went on board with M. de Nerville.

I stayed behind in expectation of dining with the vicar ; M. Duclos our captain having told me the evening before that I should do this gentleman a great pleasure, and that they had talked about it. After having saluted the governor, I went up to the vicar in the vestry, but did not speak a word to him about dinner. We came out of church with the two Spanish officers, who were to embark on board the St. Barbe ; we went along with the vicar a little way without receiving any invitation to dinner ;



dinner ; and I took care not to invite myself. When we had left him, the captain asked me where I should dine. I answered that I did not know ; that I had expected to dine with the vicar ; but as he had not mentioned any thing about it, I intended to seek my fortune somewhere else. He immediately said, that I should go with the colonel to the Governor's. I started many objections to this, not thinking myself sufficiently known to go in this manner ; the colonel insisted, and taking me by the hand, told me the Governor would be pleased with him for bringing me ; and that he certainly would take it amiss if he should know that I had refused. I consented therefore, and was received by the Governor and his lady, with all possible marks of politeness and favour. He speaks French well enough to be understood ; his lady understands it without being able, or rather without venturing to speak it. Her husband and the colonel were her interpreters. She was a native of Biscay, tall, well made, of a brown complexion, but her features were rather too masculine. She is a woman of great wit and vivacity, and about thirty-four or thirty-five years of age.

At eleven o'clock on Monday morning the second of January, M. de Bougainville, Messrs. de Nerville, de Belcourt, l' Huillier, the two Du Clos brothers, our first and second captain, Donat our first lieutenant, de St. Simon a Canadian, lieutenant of infantry, de la Gyraudais, captain of the Sphinx, and myself, all went to the Governor's, where we had as elegant a dinner as the country would afford ; but the dishes were dressed according to the custom of the place : that is to say, most of them with the fat of oxen clarified which they use instead of butter and oil ; and seasoned with such a quantity of pimento and carthamum that the victuals were quite covered with them. Care had been taken however not to put these spices upon all the dishes, and many of us eat of none but these last. The only wines offered us were Spanish, and wines from the country of Chili ; the plates and dishes were silver, and some of them china. The table was covered with a very short cloth, and the napkins were rather less

than handkerchiefs of a moderate size, naturally fringed, or, to speak more properly, unravelled at both ends. The dishes were served up one after another. When drink was called for, it was necessary to say, whether one chose wine or water, or a mixture of both; for the Spaniards generally drink nothing but water at their meals: at the end of which it is customary to bring a large glass of wine to every body in company, even without its being asked. When wine and water was called for, they were brought one after another, and we were obliged to drink them separately. The wine of Chili is of the colour of physic, compounded of rhubarb and fenna, and very much of the same taste. It takes this taste perhaps from the soil, perhaps from the goat skins lined with pitch, in which it is conveyed. There is scarce any other wine drunk in Paraguay. One soon accustoms one's self to this taste; and after having drunk it for a few days, one finds it good. It is very warm upon the stomach. But, whether from taste or fancy, the Spaniards preferred the wine we had brought with us from France. The desert was entirely composed of sweet-meats. The bread though made with excellent flour, was not good, because it was not well leavened nor properly kneaded; neither do they know how to bake it.

In the evening M. de Belcourt, who had taken a lodging in the town, met with a stranger in company, perhaps in disguise, who spoke a gascoon French. Prompted in all probability by the Jesuits, who had already taken care to acquaint themselves by the people belonging to our frigates, of M. de Belcourt's military reputation; this man proposed to him to enter into the service at Paraguay, in order to form the troops. He made him promises from the Jesuits, of the highest emoluments to induce him to accept of the proposal. M. de Belcourt pretended to listen to him, but without entering into any engagements; and the very next day acquainted M. de Bougainville with this circumstance. This gentleman answered, that some political advantage might possibly be made of this, and that if he chose to sacrifice himself for the good of his country, it might then be proper to give



give an ear to these proposals. M. de Belcourt answered, that in case he should think of engaging in this business, it would be necessary that M. de Bougainville should give him a note, certifying that he went with his consent, and for the presumptive good of the state.

The next day the stranger renewed his solicitations to M. de Belcourt with greater earnestness, desiring him to take his resolution speedily; that he need not trouble himself about his cloaths or any thing else; that care should be taken to supply him with every thing he might want; and that, in order to prevent the Spanish government from knowing any thing of the matter, he should be conducted, by ways unknown to the Spaniards, to the place of his destination. M. de Belcourt inquired which was the place, and what were the advantages proposed; but the stranger not giving any satisfactory answer, and having talked to him in a slighting manner of the Jesuits, on purpose to conceal his designs more effectually, M. de Belcourt declared at once, that he would not comply with his solicitations. But as he was under some apprehensions how he should get away, he kept himself on his guard. About the dusk of the same evening, he found himself so closely pressed by three men, that he thought himself obliged to draw his sword, and carry it out of the scabbard, to make his way, in case they should have surrounded him; which, however, they did not attempt. I had all these circumstances from his own mouth, and it is with his consent I make them public.

Towards eight o'clock in the evening, M. Mauclair, first surgeon of our frigate, came and told me, that after having had a consultation with M. Baslé the second surgeon, and M. Frontgouffe surgeon of the Sphinx, upon the present state of the sailor who had been wounded in turning the cap-stern during the late storm, they had agreed that he was growing much worse, and that he himself desired to be confessed. I went down immediately, and finding him indeed very ill, received his confession.

He

He lost his senses an hour after; about ten o'clock I administered the extreme unction, and at eleven he died.

On Tuesday morning the 3d instant, having previously apprized the vicar, we sent away the corpse in our yawl. It was deposited with the guard of the port, till the vicar should come to meet it. He came an hour afterwards, with his sexton. On his arrival, I made him a compliment in Latin, to which he gave no other answer, but a very low bow. He had a Roman surplice on, and a gown; his sexton, a lay-man, had a black petticoat on by way of cassock, and a very dirty surplice. Messrs. Duclos, Guyot, his brother Alexander, his two sons, six sailors, and myself attended the procession. At each turning the vicar chanted a response, and a prayer, and sang also the mass for the dead. He did the sailor all the honours he could have done to the captain himself, and had him buried in the church. The service being over, he invited us to dinner, and could not be prevailed upon to accept of any fee.

After dinner, I took a walk towards the extremity of the creek which forms the port, where our people were getting water. I went all over the coast and the adjacent soil, in expectation of finding some curious plants or shells; but my search was fruitless. I met with one single plant only in a state of perfection; the stem, which is eight or ten inches high, and the leaves were covered over with a short white down, so close and so thick, that it concealed the green part from the sight. I am unacquainted with the name and properties of this plant.

At the distance of two shots or thereabouts from the creek or bay, there are two fountains. The people of the country wash their linen in that which is nearest the river. It is forbidden to wash in the other; because that is the one from whence they draw the water used for drink in the town, which is at the distance of half a league from it. This fountain is bordered with a little wall of stone, and is very badly kept up, though at the king's expence; so lazy are the inhabitants, and so careless even of what concerns them nearly.



As I was passing by this fountain, I saw three or four Mulattoes, who had brought there some stones upon a cart, drawn by four large oxen ; and three others, who were filling a cask with water, in order to carry it into the town. An Indian or Mulattoe woman, with a negro woman coming to the same place to draw water also, one of the Mulattoes, who looked very much like an Indian born of Spanish parents, took the negro woman by the hand, and they both of them danced together upwards of a quarter of an hour, the dance called Calenda. Travellers who speak much of this dance in their accounts, do not exaggerate, when they describe it as the most lascivious of all dances, at least judging of it by our manners.

It is thought, that this dance has been brought into America, by the negroes of the kingdom of Arda, upon the coast of Guinea. The Spaniards dance it as well as the natives, throughout all their establishments in America, without making the least scruple about it ; although the dance is so very indecent as to astonish people who are not used to see it. It is so universally, and so much liked, that even children, as soon as they are able to stand, imitate in this particular persons more advanced in life.

It is danced to instrumental as well as vocal music, by two or by several persons together. They are all disposed in two rows, one before the other, the men opposite to the women. Those who grow tired, as well as the spectators, form a circle round the dancers, and the music. Some one of the dancers sings a song, the chorus of which is repeated by the spectators, with clapping of hands. All the dancers keep their arms half raised up, jump, turn round, make contortions with their backsides, advance within two feet or thereabouts of one another, then fall back in time, till the sound of the music or tone of the voice brings them together again. Then they strike their bellies one against another two or three times following, and retreat afterwards, whirling about, to begin the same motion over again, with jests, which are extremely lascivious, indicated by the sound

of the instrument or voice. Sometimes they mix their arms, turning round two or three times, and continuing to strike themselves upon the belly, and to kiss each other, without being in the least out of time.

One may readily judge, how surprising such a dance must appear to French manners, and how much our modesty must be offended by it. Nevertheless we are assured from the accounts of travellers, that it is so very agreeable even to the Spaniards of America, and is become so much an established custom among them, that it is even introduced among their acts of devotion: that they dance it in church, and in their processions: that even the nuns themselves, scarce ever fail to dance it on Christmas-eve, upon a stage raised up in their choir opposite the grate, which is left open, that the people may partake of the sight; but they do not admit men to dance with them.

On Wednesday the fourth of January, while Mess. de Bougainville and de Nerville were gone to the Governor, to invite him to dine on board our frigate for the Sunday following, I went to see an officer whose name was Belia, who had been brought up in France, in our royal college of Pontlevoy near Blois. He had promised me some curious and medicinal plants of the country, and some pieces of natural history. With respect to the last article he had nothing worthy of attention; but he shewed me the plants, which I shall now describe: his brother-in-law and himself acquainted me with their names, properties, and uses.

One called *Mèona*, is very much like the wild thyme, but the leaf is round, and the green not so dark; the stem red, creeping, taking root at each joint, affording a white milky juice, like the spurge. The seed grows in a spiral, bristly pod; this pod contains only a yellowish seed in form almost like a kidney. It throws off from its root several woody stalks, which spread themselves circularly on the ground, as those of the bistort. This plant taken in infusion, like tea, is said to cure a stoppage of urine as by miracle.



*Ebreno*, or *Mio-mio*, is an almost repent plant, not rising more than half a foot from the ground. The leaf is smaller than fennel, it has a very small herbaceous flower, growing in clusters, and pretty nearly umbellated: the root is reddish outwardly, and as well as the plant has the taste of the parsnip. It is taken in infusion against fluxions and colds. It seems to me to be a species of the *Meum*, or spignel.

The *Maté* has a round strait branched stem, growing about a foot and a half high, and covered with a grey down a little inclining to red. The leaves are an inch and a quarter in length, only three or four lines in breadth, of a whitish green colour, and downy on the stem. The flowers shoot out one by one along the branches, and are composed of a single yellow leaf, slit into four, and almost without smell. They are succeeded by a hulk or pod, of the thickness of a quill, an inch in length, which opens itself into four parts when dried, and lets fall some exceedingly small seeds pointed at each end, of a grey brown colour. It is said to be of admirable efficacy when applied to wounds, either recent or of long standing. M. Simoneti told me, that, after having been six months under the care of the physicians and surgeons of the army, for a wound he had received in the side near the kidneys, and which had degenerated into an ulcer, he had cured himself in a short time merely by the outward application of the leaves of this plant.

The *Cacken-laguen* or the *Canchalagua*, which is also called at Chili, *Cachinlagua*, is in every respect like the lesser Centaury of Europe. It is the Centaury of Chili, but does not grow quite so high as ours. A cold infusion is made of it, by throwing six or seven of the plants whole and dry into a glass of water for the space of the whole night, or from morning to evening. This infusion is then used as a gargle, and afterwards swallowed, by which method a sore throat is soon cured. Some fresh water is then poured upon the residuum, which is suffered to stand as long as the first; after which the gargling and deglutition is repeated. This is done also a third time. M. de Bougainville, and M. du Clos

Clos our captain, had experienced the efficacy of it more than once. When the infusion is taken warm in the manner of tea, it heats very much but purifies the blood. This plant is very famous in Chili, from whence it is brought. I believe it to be a better febrifuge than the Centaury of Europe. Might not the latter be used with equal advantage in sore throats?

*Mechoacan*, is a name the Spaniards of Montevideo give to a plant bearing no resemblance to that which is sold in our shops under the same name. That of Montevideo, which is very common there, as well as in the neighbourhood of Buenos Ayres, is a small creeping plant, the root of which runs under ground like the liquorice. It is whitish, and slender as a writing pen; some short branches shoot out from this root, which creep upon the ground, are covered with a very few small leaves, and these only at the extremity, almost resembling those of the lesser *Tithymalus*, known in several provinces of France by the name of *Réveil-matin*. M. Belia told me, that the English who trade at the colony of St. Sacrament, always carry away several of these roots. It has a purgative quality like the *Mechoacan* of our shops. When it purges too violently, its effect is soon stopped, only by swallowing a large spoonful of brandy.

Another plant which they hold in great esteem is the *Guay-curu*; it bears a leaf of a beautiful green colour, rather thick, and shooting forth in great abundance from the root, which is of a red brown colour, externally shining, and reddish within, as the strawberry plant. From the middle of the root, the stem grows out to the height of half a foot, of the thickness of a common quill, solid, without leaves, of a greyish coloured green, spreading out at the upper part into a dozen small branches, bearing at their extremity very small herbaceous flowers, without smell, and forming altogether a kind of umbrella.

This plant, especially the root, is one of the most powerful astringents in botany; and experience has proved, that it never fails in drying up and curing ulcers speedily; and even, as the vicar told us, in curing the scrophula, and stopping a dysentery.

He



He made us a present of a dozen of the plants which he had sent for on purpose, at the distance of a few leagues, from a country place belonging to him.

The *Payco* is a plant, which throws out from its root several creeping branches: these are afterwards subdivided into many others. The leaves are but three lines in length, and two in breadth, serrated, thick, and fixed to the branches without any foot-stalk. The flower is so small that it is confounded with the seed, which succeeds it, and with which the branches are almost entirely covered. At first sight, it might be taken for the *Rupture-wort*, or *Herniaria*, if the branches were shorter. The whole plant is of a pale green colour, sometimes reddish, as well as the stem, when it approaches to maturity. It smells like a lemon just beginning to spoil. It is an excellent remedy for disorders of the stomach, and indigestion. Its decoction is sudorific, and its virtues are much extolled in the pleurisy. The method of taking it, is, by chewing one of the green stems about the size of one's little finger, and swallowing afterwards the saliva together with the chewed plant. When taken in this manner it is a mild purgative. When there is none of the green plant to be had, it is taken in infusion like tea.

M. Belia spoke highly of the anti-venereal virtues of the *Colaguala*, which some call *Calaguella*. It grows in barren and sandy soils, to the height of seven or eight inches. Its stem consists of several small branches, which shoot up through the sand or gravel. They are but two or three lines in thickness, full of joints placed at small distances from each other, and covered with a pellicle which falls off of itself when it is dry. The leaves are very small, few in number, and arise immediately from the stem.

The colaguala is looked upon as an admirable specific for dissipating impostumations in a short time. Three or four doses, that is to say, three or four pieces of it in simple decoction, or infused in wine, and taken in the course of the day, are sufficient to effect this purpose. Being a very hot plant, it would become  
injurious

injurious if taken in too large a quantity. The root, which is the only part of the plant in use, is of a reddish brown colour outwardly, and resembles much the *Guaycuru* root. When cut horizontally, it has a brown spot in the center, and a whitish circle in the middle of its substance. A Franciscan named Father Rock, famous for his knowledge in physic, told me, that he prescribed the *Colaguala* in the epilepsy, as well as in the venereal disease; that when it did not succeed perfectly in the cure of the epilepsy, he had assisted it with the following prescription, which had never failed of success. He makes the patient drink, in the course of the day, a quart of water, in which a young virgin arrived at the age of puberty, or a sound healthy woman, has well washed the parts of generation on getting out of bed; with particular directions that two glasses of this water should be taken fasting, one half an hour after the other. This remedy is continued for eight or nine days consecutively, at the decline of the moon; and is repeated for several months, especially in the spring. The method of using the *Calaguala*, in venereal disorders, is by infusion in wine, or in boiling water.

The same Franciscan being with us at the Governor's country house, shewed me another plant which he called *Carqueja*, and which he told us was admirable, in infusion like tea, for dissolving coagulated blood in the body, for purifying it, and removing obstructions. But it must be used very sparingly, as it agitates the blood violently, especially the root of it.

The *Carqueja* grows like a small shrub, to the height of one foot, and its head is naturally rounded. It has no leaves distinct from the stem, which resembles much that of the *Genista* or broom, with which I fancy it may be classed. This stem divides itself into many branches to form the head. These branches are very flexible and thin.

The *Yguerilla*, the *Zarca*, and the *Charrua*, are plants greatly valued in this country; as well as the *Birabida*, or *Viravida*, which is reckoned refreshing and cooling in the highest degree. A French surgeon prescribed an infusion of the *Birabida* with good success.



success in a tertian. Frezier reckons it among the ever-greens. May it not probably be the same as I mentioned before under the name of Doradilla?

But the plant they make the most use of is the *Séfran*. It is properly a kind of thistle, known under the name of *Carthamum*. The description of it is found in every botanical treatise. Its flower is called the bastard saffron. It has the colour and form of the true saffron; but has not either its taste or smell. At Montevideo and at Brazil they sow the *Séfran* plentifully in their gardens; because they use the flower of it to cover all their victuals, and even the soup. Parrots and Paroquets are very fond of the seed, which is white, smooth, and made like that of the *Corona Solis*, or Sun-flower, but much shorter.

M. de Bougainville having told me, before he went to invite the Governor, that we should set out early to go on board again, I went to the yawl at half an hour past four. There I found M. de la Gyraudais, and the surgeon of the *Sphinx*. After having conversed some time about the plants I had been collecting, finding that M. de Bougainville did not return, M. de la Gyraudais proposed taking a walk about a mile off, behind the citadel, telling us, that the plant *Maté* had been shewn him; and that there was a great quantity of it near a fountain.

M. Frontgouffe, who had also heard of its properties, came with us in order to gather some. We collected likewise some of the seed, which I gave, as I did all the seeds I collected in the course of my voyage, to M. de Jussieu, to sow them in the King's Garden at Paris. While we were supplying ourselves with this plant, we heard a plaintive sound issuing from between a large heap of stones and rocks, which cover and surround the fountain: we were not more than seven or eight toises distant from the sound. We thought at first it proceeded from a cat confined among these stones, which might have escaped from a house about half a mile distant. As we came nearer the fountain, the cry seemed like that of a child. We were advancing  
towards

towards it, when M. Frontgouffe desired us not to proceed, saying, it was not the cry of a child, but that of an alligator. He told us, he remembered to have heard them more than once in our islands, and that had we proceeded it would have been to our cost. We found indeed that there were alligators in this country; M. de St. Simon having already told us, he had seen one of them on the bank of a small river, running behind the mountain, separated from the town only by the bay in which the port is situated. Not daring therefore to push our curiosity any farther, we contented ourselves with gathering a few more plants, and went back towards the town, in order to go on board again. As we were walking along, we met with several Curlews, by thirty in a body. They came within pistol shot of us, but we had only sticks in our hands.

About seven o'clock we reached the yawl, where we met with Mess. de Bougainville, de Nerville, de St. Simon, and Martin, Lieutenant of the Sphinx. It was very fine weather when we left the Port; and we had already made three parts of our way, when a South East wind arose so briskly as to oblige us to ply our oars, in order to get on board, before it should become more violent. It blew however harder and harder. Each cloud as it rose on the horizon brought a fresh squall, more violent than the preceding. The waters being considerably swelled by these repeated attacks, formed waves which grew bigger and bigger, and retarded our progress. Although the sea and the wind were against us, we were now within gun shot of the Sphinx, which was the nearest vessel, and on board of which we thought of setting M. de la Gyraudais, with the other officers belonging to her. The fine clear sky had disappeared. The clouds made the night still more dark, so that we could but just discern the figure of a boat, bearing towards us. We then imagined that M. Duclos, suspecting our distress, had sent out the longboat to our assistance. We hailed her, but received no answer. The sea however drove her towards us with so much swiftness, that we soon discovered her to be our small boat, floating at the mercy of

U



of the waves, with no person in her. We shifted our course to try to save her; we came up with her, put two men into her with oars, and a grappling, and then endeavoured to get on our way. It might then be half an hour after eight. We strove in vain against the tide, the violence of the waves and the wind. While we were putting the men and the oars into the small boat, we had been driven to leeward more than three quarters of a league, on the side of the French island, situated near the coast, almost opposite the citadel. The darkness prevented us from seeing land, and indeed we could hardly discern the lights they had put out on board our two frigates.

Perceiving therefore, that we got farther and farther from the ships instead of coming nearer them, we determined to make for land, and steered to the point where we thought the city was, for its situation was pointed out to us only by two lights, at a great distance from each other. The waves which broke against our boat, had already thrown in a great deal of water, which we emptied with our hats; we were wet to the skin, and the boat-men were much fatigued. M. de la Gyraudais, after having rowed for an hour, had now taken the helm; we knew not where we were, and had no brandy to keep up our strength and spirits. In this distress we thought there was no better expedient for us, than to let fall our grappling, to give the men time to rest themselves. I then put on a great coat I found near me, and we distributed the quarter-cloths among the men, to cover themselves with; not indeed to keep them from the waves, for we could not be more wet than we were, but to shelter them from the wind, which made us so very cold, that we were obliged to squeeze as close as possible to each other, in order to keep ourselves warm. We were almost resolved to remain in this condition all night, when M. de la Gyraudais thought he perceived, that we were dragging our grappling. He ordered the steersman to lay his hand on the hawser, that he might judge by the motion, whether our grappling was really aweigh or not. The steersman thought at first, that the motion he felt  
was

was caused by the shocks the boat received from the waves ; but he soon found out his mistake, and gave us notice of it. He was ordered to sound with the boat-hook, which he did, and found only three feet water, with a bottom of rocks, which are on the borders of the whole coast, and advance pretty forward in the river. The oars were placed in the row-locks, the grappling was drawn up, and we rowed for a full quarter of an hour, sounding all the while, and finding the same bottom. At last we came to a muddy bottom, with seven or eight feet water. We were going to cast our grappling here, when the men foreseeing they should get no supper in this place, said, that as we were now in the way, we must continue, and go and lay on shore. We were extremely well satisfied with their resolution, and steered towards a light, which we imagined to be that of the guard placed at the only port where it is possible to land.

Soon after, as we were all looking about us, endeavouring to find our situation, we perceived a schooner, which we knew to be at anchor very near the port. The sight of this vessel revived our spirits, and we exerted ourselves so much, that in little more than half an hour we gained the port. The officer of the guard came out to reconnoitre us. Another officer was sent with the steersman to give the Governor notice of our being returned to the city, because we had not been able to reach our vessel. He sent us compliments of condolance, and at the same time invited us to supper, and desired us to take up our night's lodging at his house.

We were apprehensive of being troublesome to him, not only on account of the late hour, for it was midnight, but also because we were too numerous a company : besides, as we were very wet, and in a strange pickle, we thought it better to go in search of a Frenchman named Lacombe, of St. Flour in Auvergne, settled at Buenos Ayres, and having a house also at Montevideo : he was already known to many of our officers, from whom he had made several purchases. A soldier of the guard, who spoke French, offered to conduct us. Instead of



leading us to the place where M. Lacombe lived, he brought us to the house of a friend of his, where the soldier had seen him several times. We knocked near a quarter of an hour before we could get any answer. At length they answered, the door was opened, and we found M. de Belcourt in bed in this house, as it was the place where he lodged. Thinking that we were playing him a trick, he did nothing but laugh at us. As we were not much in a humour for laughing, we enquired which was M. Lacombe's house, and were informed. We were making the best of our way to it when we met the Governor, who came on purpose to intreat us not to make use of any house but his. As we could not possibly refuse, after many civilities on both sides, we accompanied him.

When we came there we found every body up, and the cloth laid. Seeing we were all very wet, they offered us clean linen and cloaths. Those who had put on their great coats soonest, and were certainly not so wet as I was, refused even to change cloaths. The Governor's lady solicited me so often to put on at least a night gown, that I at last accepted of it. It was one of her gowns, which I had so much trouble to get on that the Governor gave me one of his own. We sat down to a light supper, provided hastily for us. Our adventure was the subject of much conversation; at last we drank a dish of chocolate, and, as it was now almost two o'clock, every body thought of retiring to bed.

Mess. de Bougainville and de Nerville were put into a small room of the court yard, in which there was no other furniture besides two chairs and two beds; one in a kind of alcove formed by a simple partition of wood, the other a camp-bed placed in the opposite angle. We had attended them to this apartment, and I took it for granted I was to pass the night in a place much of the same kind, when a negro woman pulling me by the sleeve beckoned me to follow her. She brought me back into the room where the company had been, where I found the Governor's lady and a negro woman employed in fastening  
together

together some crimson damask stools, which before ornamented the bottom of the room. Not knowing why she was thus employed, I was talking in the mean time with the Governor. At length she interrupted me, saying, it is for you, Sir, I am preparing this bed; you will be near us, and will not fare worse than the rest. After having expressed my gratitude for her attention and politeness, I did all I could to prevent her from going on with this business, but all to no purpose; she still proceeded, telling me it was a great pleasure and satisfaction to her. When she had made me a very good bed, she retired with the Governor into the next room, where they slept.

A camp-bed was put up for M. de la Gyraudais, in the first room on coming in; and, as there were no more spare beds, a fire was made to dry our cloaths in the middle of the first hall, where M. de St. Simon and the rest slept upon the chairs.

About half an hour after four, one of these gentlemen came to wake me, telling me M. de Bougainville was up, and that we must go. I dressed myself quickly, and we were going without saying a word, when a servant from the Governor came in, and desired us to stay a little, that his master was getting up, and would pay his compliments to us. We told him to intreat the Governor from us not to rise, that he wanted rest, and that we were going away that instant, in order not to incommode him any longer. The wind and waves were considerably abated, and we got on board in a short time.

The squalls of wind and rain our vessels were exposed to since the preceding evening had been extremely violent. The storm having begun early in the spot where our frigates lay at anchor, because they were not under shelter of the town as we were; the crews had been in very little concern about us, being persuaded that we should not even have run the risk of coming from shore in such weather. At all events, however, they had taken the precaution to put out lights. The two men we had put into the boat to save it, had been luckily driven into a small sandy creek under shelter of the French island; and the long-boat



boat of the Sphinx, which had been sent after her, had got to the bottom of the bay, in the place where we used to water. They were both returned when we came on board.

In the morning of the sixth of January we went back to the town, to return our thanks to the Governor, and to pay him the compliments of the new year. He detained us to dinner. The conversation turned much upon the curiosities of the country. This made the Governor recollect that he had a shell which he thought very scarce. He shewed it us: it was a papyraceous Nautilus, as large and beautiful as any I ever saw. He made a present of it to M. de Bougainville. It had been sent to him from Rio de Janeiro; and he told us, he had found a similar one on the coast of the island Maldonnado; but that it had been broken. The Governor's lady gave me a parcel of the Canchalagua, which was all she had left of it. A few days before she had made M. de Bougainville a present of a paroquete, which spoke very prettily, and had also given him a cup made of the Calabash of Peru, mounted in silver, with a *Bombilla*, or tube of the same metal, used to suck up the maté.

Many authors of voyages have mentioned the Paraguay plant, or Cassioberry bush, as one of the principal sources of the riches of the Spaniards, of the Indians, and especially of the Jesuits inhabiting this province. That my readers may be perfectly acquainted with this plant and its use, I shall insert the account given of it by M. Ulloa, which he had from the missionaries of the country; for as they suffer none but their own brethren to penetrate into the country, this account can only be had from them.

“ It is affirmed, says M. Ulloa, that the sale of this plant was at first so considerable, and became so great a fund of riches, that luxury soon introduced itself among the conquerors of this country, who were at first reduced to the bare necessities of life. As their taste for luxury was always increasing, in order to support their prodigious expences, they were obliged to have recourse to the Indians subdued by force of arms, or who had

voluntarily surrendered themselves: of these they made their servants, and soon after their slaves. They worked them too hard, so that many of them fell under the weight of labour they were unused to; and more of them under the oppression of the cruel treatment they were exposed to, rather from the loss of their strength, than from their indolence. Others escaped by flight, and became most irreconcilable enemies to the Spaniards. The Spaniards fell into their former state of indigence; which however did not make them more industrious. Luxury had increased their wants so much, that the sale of the Paraguay plant alone was not sufficient to supply them: most of them indeed were now no longer able to buy it, for the great consumption of it had enhanced its price." Tom. I. page 13.

This plant, so famous in South America, is the leaf of a tree about the bigness of a middling sized apple-tree. Its taste is like that of the mallow, and in figure it nearly resembles the orange leaf. It also bears some resemblance to the leaf of the *Cocoa* of Peru, where a great deal of it is carried, especially among the mountains, and in all places where they work the mines. The Spaniards think it the more necessary, as the use of the wines of the country is hurtful there. It is brought dry, and almost reduced to powder. It is never suffered to remain long in infusion, because it would then turn the water as black as ink.

It is distinguished into two kinds, though they are both one and the same leaf. The first is called *Caa*, or *Caamini*; the other *Caacuys*, or *Yerva de Palos*; but Father *del Técho* asserts that the name of the genus is *Caa*; and distinguishes three species, under the names *Caacuis*, *Caamini*, and *Caaguazu*.

According to the same traveller, who passed great part of his life in the Paraguay, the *Caacuys* is the first bud, just beginning to expand its leaves. The *Caamini* is the leaf in full growth, from which the stalks are taken, before it is roasted: if the stalks are left on, it is called *Caaguazu* or *Palos*. The leaves when roasted are preserved in pits digged in the earth, and covered with



with a cow's skin. The Caacuys will not keep so long as the two other species, the leaves of which are exported to Tucuman, to Peru, and even into Spain. It is very liable to injury in the removal. It is asserted even, that this plant, taken on the spot, has a particular bitterness, which enhances its virtues as well as its price, and which it loses by transportation.

The manner of taking the Caacuys is by filling a vessel with boiling water, into which the leaf, powdered and reduced to a paste, is thrown. As it dissolves, any small portion of earth which may have remained sticking to it, floats at the top, so as easily to be skimmed off. The water is then strained through a rag, and being suffered to stand a little, is afterwards sucked up through a reed. Generally there is no sugar put to it; but a little lemon juice is mixed with it, or some kinds of wafers of an agreeable smell. When it is taken as a vomit, a little more water is thrown on it, and it is left till it is almost cold.

The most famous place for this plant is at *Villa*, or the new *Villarica*, which is near the mountains of Maracagu, situated to the East of Paraguay; about 25 degrees 25 minutes South latitude. This district is celebrated for the cultivation of this tree; it is not however upon the mountains that it grows, but in the marshy bottoms which divide them.

From this place are taken for the Peru only, one hundred thousand *Arrobes*, each of which weighs twenty-five pounds of sixteen ounces standard weight, and the price of the arrobe is seven crowns, or twenty-eight French livres, so that the whole profit of the hundred thousand *Arrobes* amounts to two million eight hundred thousand French livres. Yet the Caacuys bears no fixed price, and the Caamini sells for twice as much as the Caaguazu. The last of these, while we were at anchor at Montevideo sold for twenty-five livres, or five piasters per Arrobe. The Governor procured it us at this price.

The Indians settled in the provinces of Uruguay and Parana, under the government of the Jesuits, have sown some of the seeds of this tree, brought from Maracayu, which have hardly degenerated

degenerated in the least. They resemble much the seed of the ivy. But these Indians do not prepare the plant in its first state; they keep the Caamini for their own use, and sell the Caaguazu or palos to pay the tribute they owe to Spain.

The Spaniards imagine they find in this plant a remedy or preservative against all diseases. Every body agrees that it has a laxative and diuretic quality, but I would not answer for all the properties the Jesuits attribute to it. I believe the most incontestible of these properties, which is however the one they are most silent upon, is that of supplying them with a prodigious sum of money every year.

It is reported, that some persons having at first taken this plant too freely, it brought on a total deprivation of their senses, which they did not recover till a few days after. It appears indeed certain, that it often produces opposite effects, such as to procure sleep to those who want it, and to rouse those who are lethargic; to be at once both nourishing and purgative.

Custom renders the use of it necessary; and it is often with difficulty that people abstain from an immoderate use of it; for it is affirmed that an over-dose of it inebriates, and brings on most of the inconveniencies which follow an excess in drinking strong liquors.

According to Mr. Ulloa, the Paraguay plant, is called *Maté* at Peru. He says, that in order to prepare it a certain quantity is thrown into a calabash, mounted in silver, which is also called *Maté*, or *Totumo*, or *Calabacito*.

Some sugar is thrown into this vessel, and cold water poured upon the whole, that the plant reduced to a paste may be well moistened: the vessel is afterwards filled with boiling water; and the plant being in very small pieces, the liquor is sucked up through a tube of a sufficient size, but too small to admit the plant to pass. The tube or reed made use of is called *Bombilla*. As the water diminishes it is renewed, adding always some sugar, till the plant floats no longer on the surface: at



which time a fresh quantity of it is put in. It is often mixed with the juice of lemon, or Seville orange, and with sweet scented flowers. This liquor is commonly taken fasting: but many people drink it also after dinner. Perhaps the plant may be healthful; but the method of taking it is extremely disgusting. How numerous soever the company is, every person drinks by turns through the same tube or bombilla, handing the *maté* from one to the other. The Spaniards of Europe care very little for this drink, but the Creoles are passionately fond of it. They never travel without a supply of the Paraguay plant; and never omit taking it every day, preferring it to all other kind of food, and never eating any till after they have taken it.

Some, says Frézier, (Relat. du Voyage de la Mer de Sud, page 228) call the Paraguay plant, St. Bartholomew's plant; because they say this Apostle went into these provinces, where he changed the plant which was before poisonous, and made it salutary and wholesome. Instead of drinking the infused liquor separately as we do tea, they put the plant into a cup made of a calabash, mounted in silver, which they call *Maté*. They put sugar to it, and pour hot water over it, then drink it off immediately, without suffering it to stand in infusion, because it would grow as black as ink. In order to avoid taking up the plant, which floats on the surface, they make use of a silver tube, the end of which is formed into a round knob, perforated with several small holes: so that the liquor, which is sucked through the other end, comes up without the plant. The company drinks round through the same tube, pouring more hot water as the first is consumed. Instead of the reed or *bombilla*, some people remove the plant with a plate of silver, full of small holes. The aversion which the French have shewn to drink after all kinds of people, especially in a country where there are so many persons afflicted with the venereal disease, has introduced an invention of small glass tubes, which they now begin to use at Lima. In my opinion, the taste of this liquor is better than tea, it has an agreeable vegetable smell. The people

people of the country are so used to it, that even the poorest among them drink it at least once a day.

The trade of the Paraguay plant, adds the author, is carried on at *Santa Fé*, where it is brought by the river Plata, and by land carriage. There are two kinds of it: one of which is called *Yerva de Palos*; the other, which is a finer sort, and of a higher quality, is called *Hierba de Camini*. The last comes from the lands belonging to the Jesuits. The greatest consumption of it is made from *Paz* to *Cusco*, where it is twice the value of the other, which is sold from *Potosi* to *Paz*. Above 50,000 arrobes are brought every year from Paraguay to Peru; that is to say, 1,250,000 weight of one and the other species, the third part of which quantity at least is *Camini*; without reckoning about 25,000 Arrobes of the *Palos*, sent into *Chili*. Each packet, containing six or seven Arrobes, pays four reals duty, at *Alcavala*; and the expence of conveying it above six hundred leagues doubles the prime cost, which is about two piasters: so that at *Potosi*, it costs five piasters, or five and twenty livres of France, per Arrobe. It is generally conveyed in carts, which carry one hundred and fifty Arrobes from *Santa Fé* to *Jujui*, the last town of *Tucuman*; and from thence to *Potosi*, which is still an hundred leagues farther, it is carried upon mules. I have observed, that the use of this plant is necessary in places where they work the mines, and in the mountains of Peru, where the white people imagine wine to be pernicious: they rather chuse to drink nothing but brandy, leaving the wine to the Indians and Blacks, who are very well satisfied with it.

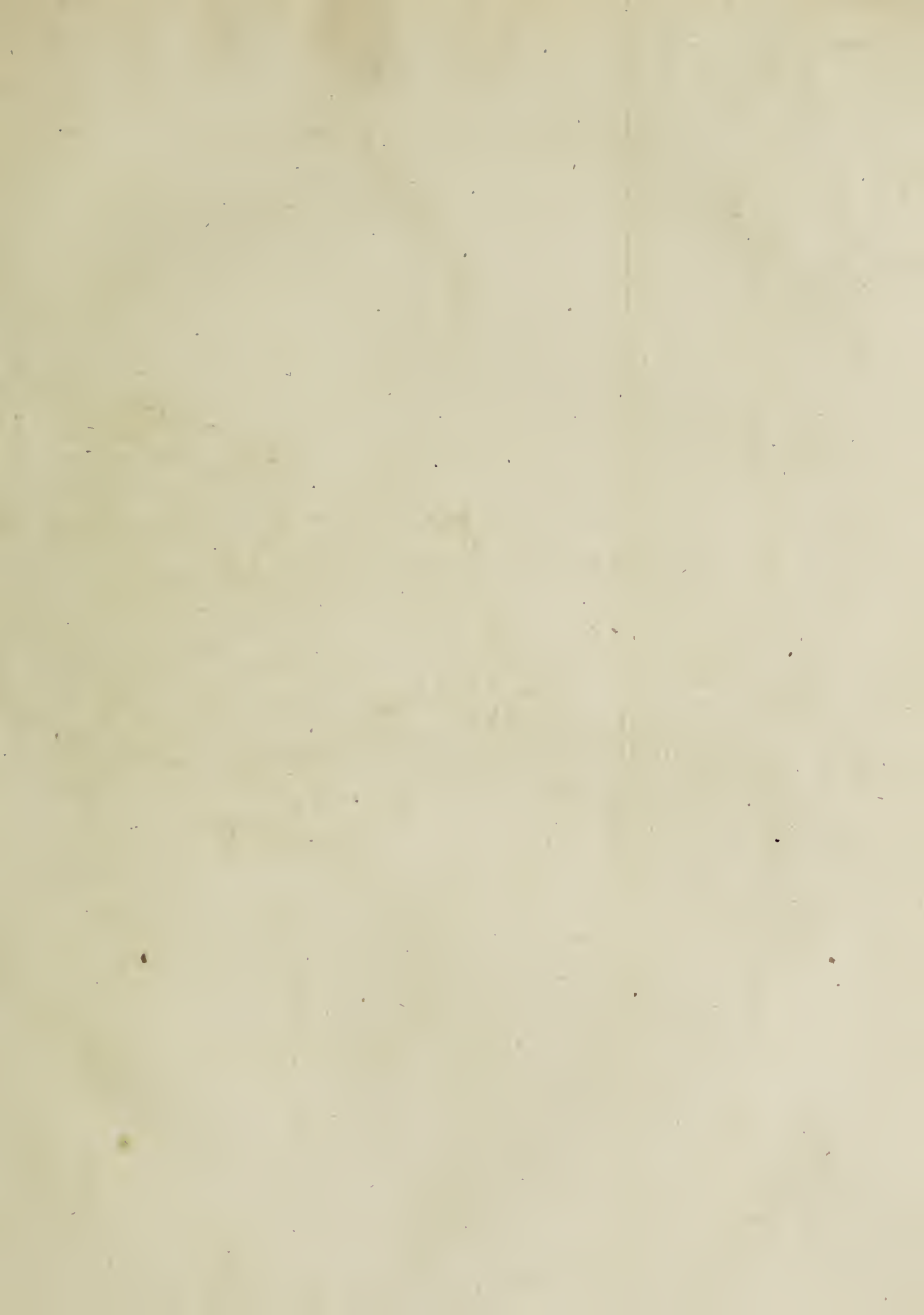
I was witness at *Montevideo* of the truth of the account given by these two authors. At whatever time of the day one goes into any house, one is sure to find somebody drinking *Maté*, which they never fail to offer to any one who comes in, even in the very hottest weather; being persuaded that this infusion is cooling, that it assists digestion, &c. The vessel out of which one drinks the *Maté* usually stands on a foot, fastened to a board. This was the general custom in almost every house; but some



of the inhabitants held the vessel alone, ornamented with silver, in their hands, without any board. There are also some *bombillas* or reeds, the end of which put into the liquor, is formed like an oyster-shell, fixed to the tube by the top of its hinge.

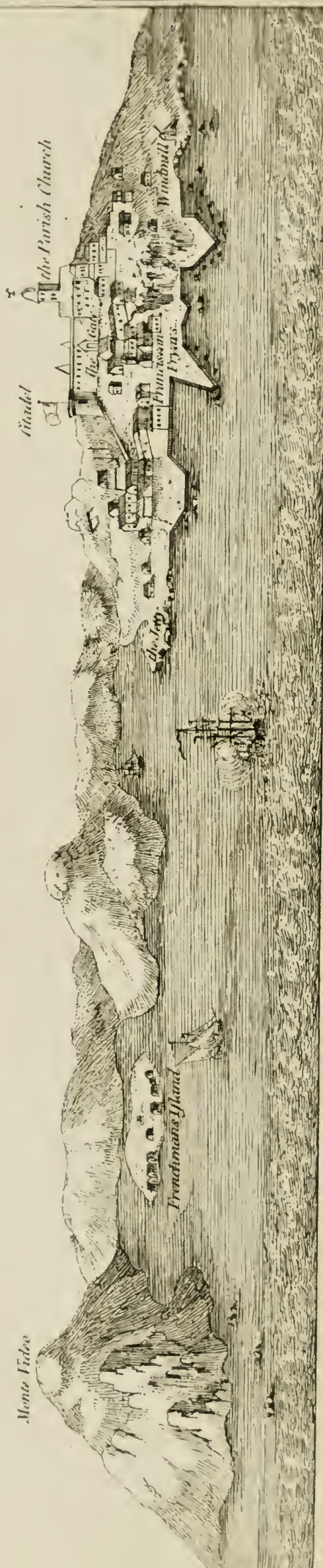
While we were at the Governor's, two of our sailors deserted; some said that one of them was a Maltese, others that he came from Biscay: they had given him the nick-name of Spaniard. The other came from lower Brittany. We searched for them in vain. We learnt afterwards that they had offered to enter on board the Spanish frigate, St. Barbe, but the owner assured me he had refused them. A few days after four sailors deserted from the Sphinx: one of them named Plaisance, who had been formerly a dragoon, and had served in Canada under M. de Bougainville. This man had been very pressing to let him embark with us, when we left St. Malo. M. de Bougainville had always looked upon him as a very honest and brave man, very fit to become an inhabitant of a colony. He had given him two complete suits, and other cloaths. Two days before he had deserted, he had been trusted with a fusil, and a rich sword to sell. He gave out that they had been stolen from him. Whether this report was true, or whether he had really sold them, it is certain that one of the inhabitants declared that Plaisance had sold the sword to an officer's servant. Plaisance finding himself suspected, and not being able to clear himself properly of the accusation, ran away, for fear of being punished for his dishonesty. The Governor, at M. de Bougainville's solicitation, who had promised ten piasters for every deserter that should be brought back to him, sent some dragoons after them, but they came back without any tidings of them. I believe that if one had even promised a reward of one hundred piasters, they would not have stopped any of them: for it is the interest of Spain to retain as many men as possible in the country for the sake of population.

Monte-





A VIEW of the TOWN of ST. PHILIP of MONTE VIDEO.



PLAN  
of the  
TOWN of ST. PHILIP  
OF  
MONTE VIDEO

- Explanation
- A. Citadel or Fort St. Philip
  - B. Governor's House
  - C. Royal Battery of 17 Guns
  - D. The Franciscan Friars
  - E. Windmill
  - F. Key or Jetty with a Battery of 6 Guns
  - G. Guard Room
  - H. Punta Brava



Montevideo is a new colony. Five and twenty years ago there were only a few huts in it. It is, however, the only tolerable place for the anchorage of ships that come up the Rio de la Plata. At present it is a small town which improves every day. The streets are made perfectly strait, and wide enough to admit three coaches abreast. I have given a view of it, taken as it appeared from on board the Eagle frigate, while we lay at anchor between the mountain and the town, according to the description I have given above.

The houses consist only of ground floors, under the roof; one of them only is to be excepted; this is situated in the great square, and belongs to the engineer, who built it and lives in it. It has one story, and a kind of a double roof with a pretty long projection, which supports a balcony in the middle of the front. I have given the plan of this town.

Each tradesman's house generally consists of a hall, which serves by way of entrance, a few bed-chambers, and a kitchen, the only place in which there is a chimney, and where they make any fire. These houses are therefore properly a ground floor, fourteen or fifteen feet high, including the roof. The entrance into the Governor's house is a long square hall, which receives light only from one small sash, half filled with paper and half with glass. The bottom of the sash is closed with planks of polished wood. This hall may, perhaps, be about fifteen feet wide, by eighteen feet long. From hence one goes into the room for receiving company, which is almost square, but rather longer than it is wide. At the bottom, opposite the only window in the room, made much in the same taste as that I have before described, there is a kind of alcove six feet wide, closed with bars of iron, and covered with tigers skins. In the middle of this is an arm chair for the Governor's Lady, and on each side six stools covered, as the arm chair is, with crimson velvet. All the ornament consists in three small bad pictures, and a few large plans, half-pencilled and half coloured, still worse in point of drawing than the pictures. The two other  
sides



sides of the room are filled with seats for the men. These are wooden chairs with very high backs, resembling those made in the time of Henry the fourth of France, having two turned pillars supporting a frame which adorns the middle, covered with leather, curiously stamped and wrought, as well as the seat. The door which leads from this room into the next, where the Governor and his lady sleep, is only closed by a kind of curtain made of tapestry. The two angles of this room on each side of the window are filled up, one with a wooden table, upon which the vessel for taking the *Maté* always stands; the other with a kind of cupboard, having two or three shelves, furnished with a few china dishes and cups.

The lady of the house is the only person who sits in the alcove when there are only men in company, except she should invite some of them to sit on the stools near her.

These rooms have, generally speaking, neither flooring, nor pavement. From the inside of them one may see the reeds which support the tiling of the roof.

The white people spend their time in idle conversation, in taking the *Maté*, or in smoking a *Sigare* or *Cigare*, which is a kind of small cylinder, six or seven inches long, and about half an inch in diameter, composed of tobacco leaves rolled one over the other.

The merchants, and a very few artists, are the only persons who have any employment at Montevideo. There are no shops, no signs, nor no outward show, by which they can be found. But one is sure of meeting with them, if one goes into any house situated in an angle formed by the meeting of two streets. The same merchant sells wine, brandy, woollen drapery, linen, toys, &c.

In the streets one meets with nothing but white or black people, or mulattoes on horseback; and horses standing at the doors of the houses without being fastened. This country might well be called a hell for horses. They often make them work three days following, without giving them either meat or drink; sometimes

sometimes they are kept tied up for as long a time, with the same treatment, and doing nothing except running from the end of one street to another. At the end of three days, they are sent back again into the country to feed upon what grass they can find. The person who goes with them, takes off the saddle, and puts it upon another horse, whom he brings to the town to be treated in the same manner.

Notwithstanding this they are excellent cattle, having preserved the spirit of the Spanish horses, from which they are bred. They are extremely sure footed, and surprizingly swift. Their step is so sharp, and so long, that it is equal to the full trot, or small gallop of our horses. Some of them are so light that nothing can be compared to them. When they step they raise the fore foot and the hind foot at the same time; and instead of bringing the hind foot in the place where the fore foot was, they stretch it out much farther, bringing it opposite to and even beyond the fore foot of the other side; which makes their motion as quick again as that of other horses, and at the same time much easier for the rider. They are not remarkable for beauty; but deserve much encomium for their swiftness, mildness, courage, and abstemiousness. The inhabitants make no provision of hay or straw for these animals. Their only food all the year is in the fields. It is true, that in this country it is never cold enough to freeze either the rivers or the plants.

The environs of Montevideo are an extensive plain. The soil is a black thick earth, extremely fertile with very little manurement. This country only wants some persons to be employed in cultivating it to become one of the best in the world. The air of it is wholesome, the sky serene, and the heat not excessive. It is rather deficient in wood, which is found only a long side the rivers. Here tigers, leopards, and other wild beasts chiefly resort. The tigers especially are rather numerous, larger, and more fierce than those of Africa. The Governor had one of these tigers brought up from a whelp in his courtyard. He was fastened near the entrance of the door, with a single

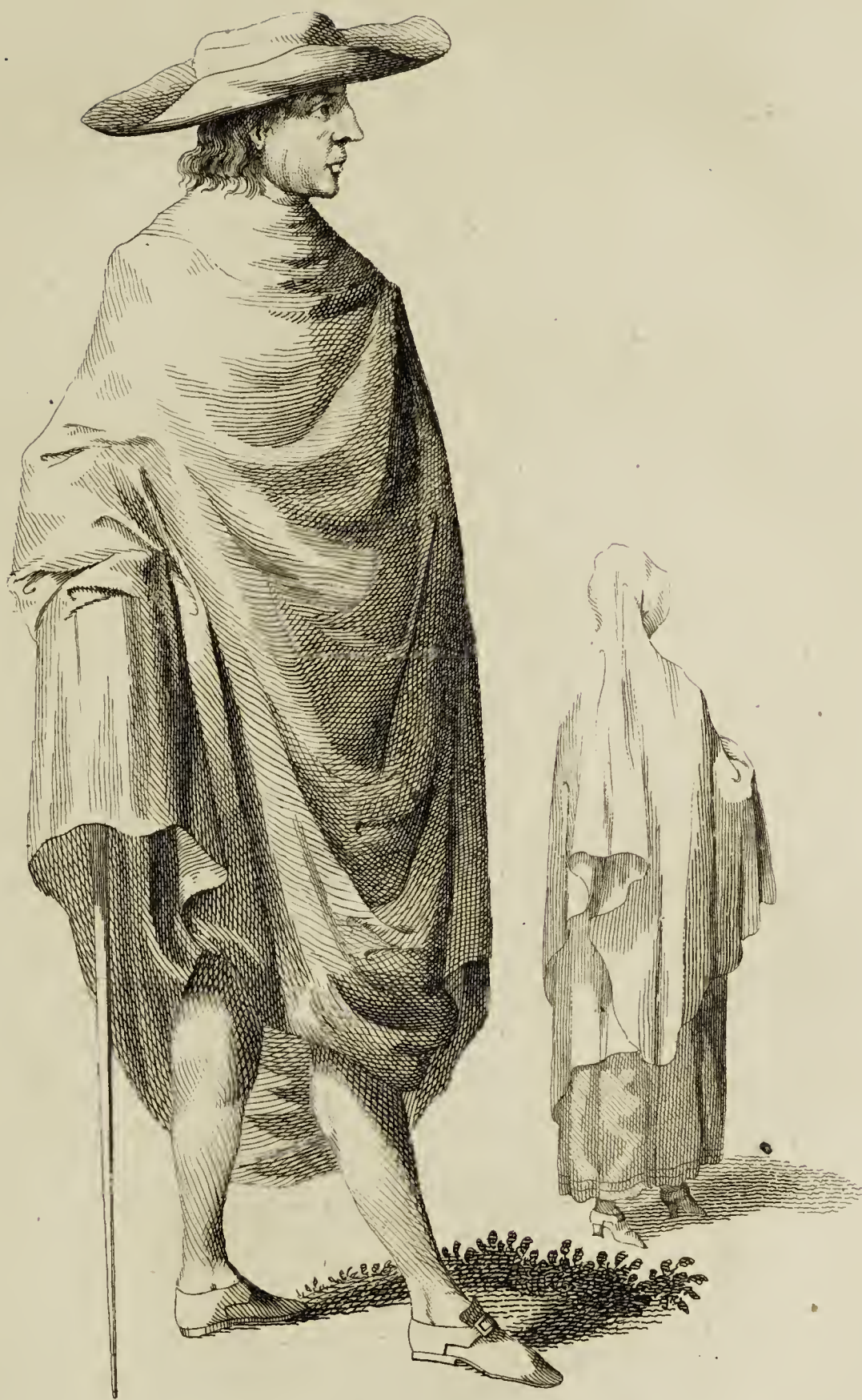


single strap of leather, passed round his neck. The dragoons and servants used to play with him, and he never gave any signs of his natural ferocity. They used to turn him about, to pull him, to throw him over and over as one would do a tame cat. The Governor seeing that M. de Bougainville took a fancy to him, had him carried on board, and made a present of him. A cage was made for him of thick planks, six inches in square, and he was kept eight days. At the end of this time, he began to roar now and then, especially in the night. It was then apprehended that he would grow furious, or that, even in play, he might swallow the arm of some of the ship boys, or children who went to see him, and who sometimes put their hands between the planks of his cage. Besides, it was necessary to supply him with fresh meat for his food, and we had none of that to spare. These considerations determined M. de Bougainville to have him strangled. He was then but four months old, and his height, when he stood upright, was two feet three inches. By this one may judge how high he would have grown.

The Spaniards of Montevideo live, as I have said before, in great indolence. They are cloathed nearly as the Portuguese at the island of St. Catherine; but they very frequently wear white hats, the flaps of which hang loose over their shoulders, and cannot be made too large for them.

The women are pretty well shaped, but one cannot say with truth that they have a complexion of lilies and roses; on the contrary they are much tanned, have commonly but few teeth, and those not white.

Their dress consists outwardly of a plain white or coloured waistcoat, well fitted to the waist, the skirts of which fall four fingers in length upon the petticoat. This petticoat is made of a stuff more or less rich, according to the circumstances or fancy of the person who wears it. It is edged with gold lace, or with a fringe of silver, gold, or silk; sometimes in double rows, but without flounces. They wear no caps of linen or lace. A simple ribbon passed round the head keeps the hair together at the



*A Spaniard of Montevideo.*











*A Spanish Lady of Montevideo.*

top, from whence passing on the back part of the head, it falls in two or three tresses down the back; flowing sometimes as low as the bend of the knee. The longer they are the more beautiful they are reckoned.

When the women go out, and sometimes even in the house, they cover their heads with a piece of fine, white, woollen stuff, trimmed with gold or silver lace, or silk. This piece of stuff which they call *Iquella*, or mantle, covers also their shoulders and arms, and falls down below the waist. They cross the ends of it over the breast, or under the arms, as our French ladies do their cloaks. When they wear this kind of mantle in the house, they seldom cover their head with it. The country women of Poitou wear some nearly of the same kind. But in the streets, and at church, the Spanish women put this mantle so close upon their heads, that one can hardly see any of their face except an eye, and the nose: in the house they often do not even cover their neck with it.

The women at home enjoy at least as much liberty as in France. They receive their company with much politeness, and are easily prevailed upon to sing, dance, play upon the harp, guitar, theorbo, or mandoline. In these things they are much more complaisant than our French ladies. When they are not engaged in dancing, they seat themselves upon stools raised, as I said before, under a kind of alcove, at the bottom of the room, where the company is. The men cannot sit near them, unless they are invited; and when this favour is bestowed upon them, it is looked upon as a mark of familiarity.

The manner of dancing among the ladies seems to partake of the indolence in which they pass their lives, though they are naturally very lively. In most of their dances their arms either hang loosely down by their side, or are folded under their mantle, which they also call *Rebos*. In going through the *Sapateo*, one of the most common of their dances, they keep their arms raised up, and snap their fingers in the air, as they sometimes do in France, when they dance the rigadoon. The *Sapateo* is per-



formed without moving much out of the same place, and by striking the ground with the extremity of the foot and the heel alternately. The ladies hardly appear to move; they rather seem to slide along upon their feet, than to advance in cadence; this is owing to the lightness and celerity with which they move their feet.

The Governor and the military men are dressed after the French fashion, except that they always wear a hat upon their heads, and that they are never powdered or curled, any more than the women. They live also in a great state of indolence, as well as the other Spaniards, who are dressed nearly in the same manner as the Portuguese of St. Catherine's island.

The common people, mulattoes, and negroes, instead of a cloak, wear a piece of broad striped stuff, of different colours, slit only in the middle, to let the head through. It falls down upon their arms, and covers them as low as the wrist. On the fore, and on the back part, it comes down below the calf of the leg, and is fringed all round. This garment is called *Poncho*, or *Chony*. Every body wears it on horseback, finding it more convenient than the cloak or great coat. The Governor shewed us one of them, wrought in gold and silver at Chili, from whence this garment has been brought. It had cost him more than three hundred piasters: some of them are made at the same place at the rate of two thousand.

The Poncho keeps off the rain, and defends from the wind; it serves for a bed covering at night, and for a carpet in the country. All these dresses may be seen in the plates.

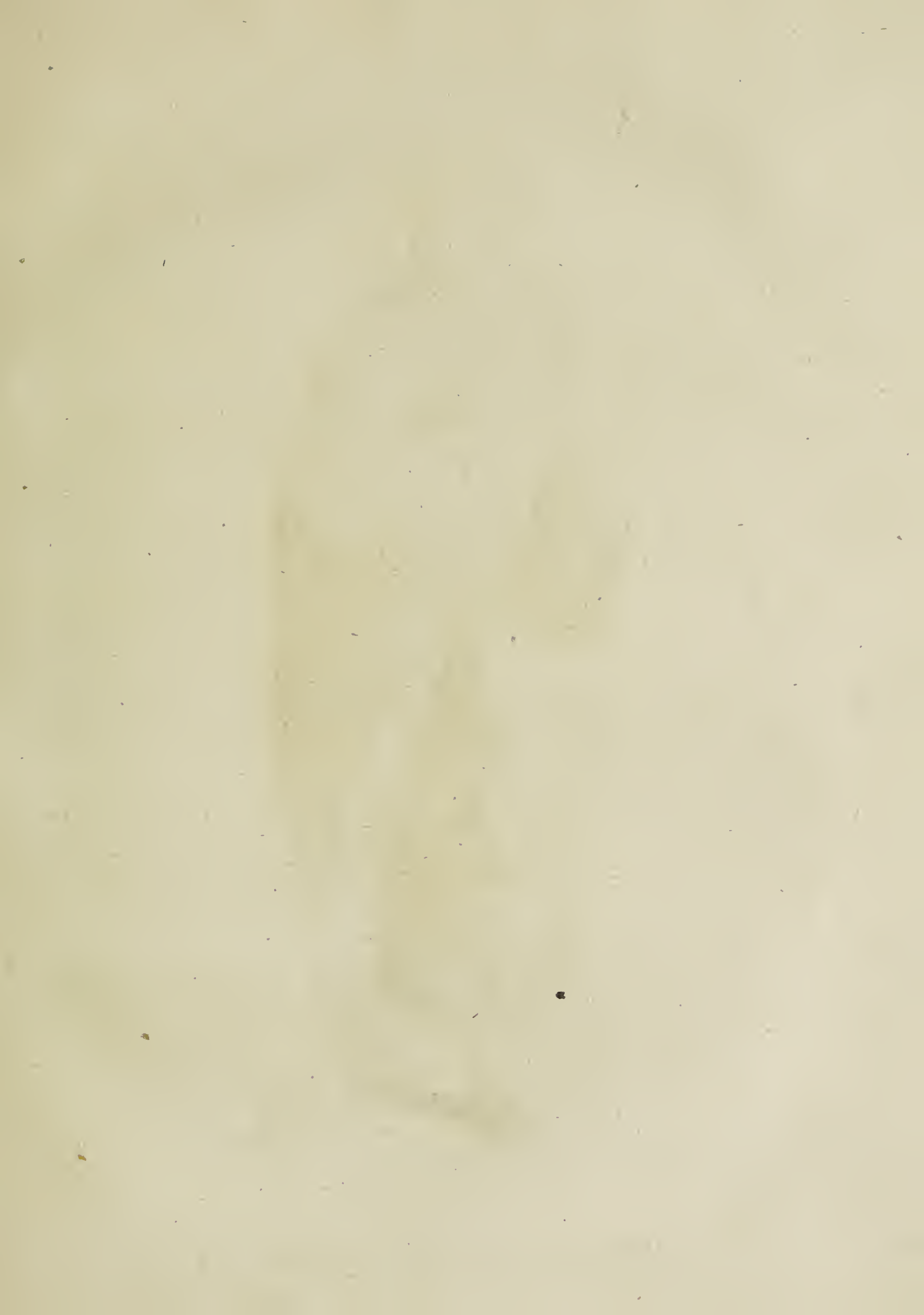
The Spaniards live in a very plain manner. The men, who are not busied in trade, rise very late, as well as the women. The slaves, negro women, or mulattoes, prepare the *Maté*, while their masters are dressing, who put the reed into their mouths, almost before they have put their feet into their slippers. The men afterwards sit still with their arms folded, till they take it in their heads to converse, and smoke a *cigale* with their neighbours. Four or five of them sometimes stand together



*A Spaniard of Montevideo.*











*A Spanish Gentleman of Montevideo.*

ther at the door of a house, talking and smoking: Others mount their horses, and go out, not to take a ride about the country, but through the street. If they have a fancy for it, they get off their horses, mix with any company they meet, gossip for two hours without saying any thing of consequence, smoke, take some *Maté*, then mount their horses again; who has been all this while standing as stock still as a wooden horse, without being fastened, and as if he was listening to the conversation. Sometimes there are as many horses as men.

During this interval, the women remain seated on a stool at the bottom of their apartment; having under their feet next to the floor a mat made of reeds, and over the mat some cloaks of the savages, or skins of tigers. There they play upon the guitar, or upon any other instrument, which they accompany with the voice; or they take the *Maté*, while the negro women are dressing the dinner in the same room.

About half an hour after twelve, or one o'clock, the dinner is served up; this consists of beef dressed in various ways, but always with a great quantity of pimento and safran. Sometimes ragoos of mutton are brought up, which they call *Carnero*; and sometimes fish, but very seldom any poultry, which is rather scarce. There is great plenty of game, but the Spaniards do not go in quest of it, as that would be too fatiguing. The desert is composed of sweetmeats.

Immediately after dinner, both masters and slaves indulge in the *Siesta*, that is, they lie down; sometimes they undress themselves and go to bed, where they sleep for two or three hours. Workmen, who live by the labour of their hands, do not deny themselves these hours of indulgence. A great part of the day being thus lost, this is the reason of their doing but little work, and makes all handicrafts excessively dear. This circumstance may also proceed from the plenty of money there is here.

It is not surprizing they should be indolent and lazy. Their meat costs them only the trouble of killing, skinning, and cut-



ting up the ox to dress it. Bread is very cheap. The skins of oxen and cows serve to make them all kinds of sacks, to cover part of their houses, and for a thousand other purposes, for which different sorts of materials are used in Europe. These skins are so common, that many slips of them are found scattered here and there along the streets the least frequented, in the squares, and upon the walls of the gardens.

Few of these gardens are cultivated, though there is one belonging to each house. The ground is left fallow. I saw but one garden tolerably well kept, and this undoubtedly was because the gardener was an Englishman. Vegetables therefore are scarce here. The plant they cultivate the most is the *sefran* or *Carthamum*, for their soup and sauces.

It is very common among them to keep a mistress. Those who have children by them, give these children a kind of legitimacy, by acknowledging themselves publicly to be their fathers: after which, these children inherit nearly as the legitimates do. There is no ignominy fixed upon illegitimate births; because the laws authorize them so far, as even to bestow the title of gentlemen to bastards: in which these laws appear more agreeable to humanity, not making the innocent suffer for the guilty.

I have observed, while I was at mass, that the Chassuble was composed only of three slips of stuff, sewed together lengthways, without being in the form of a cross. The middle slip only is of a different colour from the other two. During the time of mass, one of the inhabitants plays upon the harp, in a gallery: this harp certainly serves instead of an organ. I saw no particular demonstration of devotion, but that of striking their breasts pretty hard five or six different times, from the beginning of the service till after the communion. The Rosary is much in use here; and the Ave Maria is almost the only prayer they say. Many of them wear the Rosary round their necks. The Portuguese of St. Catherine's island, white men, negroes, and mulattoes, had likewise almost all of them Rosaries; some wore  
them

them outwardly, especially the blacks, the others wore them under their cloaths. They are also very devoutly inclined to the scapulary of mount Carmel; which is worn by both men and women. They think the scapulary and the *Avillas* will preserve them from all dangers, and insure their eternal salvation. They are scrupulous only about the externals of devotion. These *Avillas* which one sees hanging at their necks are a kind of sea chesnut, resembling a flat round bean, of the size of a half-crown, and two lines and a half in thickness; the skin is grained, and very finely shagreened, of a pale chesnut colour; at its circumference there is a black band, which almost surrounds it. I picked up a great many of them on the sea coast, at the island of St. Catherine, without knowing what they were: and I have seen many of them mounted in silver, at a goldsmith's shop in Montevideo. He told me, that when it was worn round the neck it preserved from infectious air and witches.

At each altar there is a veil which reaches from top to bottom, always hanging before the principal image, in the same manner as that they place in France before the host, when taken out of the tabernacle, during the time of a sermon or a discourse. This veil always remains. At the beginning of mass, the string which fastens the veil is pulled up, and the veil raised like a curtain, so as to discover the image: when mass is over, the veil is let down again.

Two days after sailing from Cape Frehel, near St. Malo, we put into a small barrel of water a liquor which had been given us by M. Seguin, a chymist, who lives in the *rue des postes, près de l'Estrapade*, at Paris, as a preservative of sweet water from corruption, as well by sea as by land, and as having the property not only of preventing, but likewise of curing the sea scurvy. As we had hitherto kept the water we brought with us from St. Malo's, sweet; we now compared it with the other, and finding no difference, we determined not to open this cask again, in which we had put the liquor, till the fresh water should undergo some considerable change.



The very night in which the storm obliged us to lie at the Governor's, it produced more fatal consequences, at the distance of two cannon shot from our frigates. The thunder was very loud, and the lightning fell upon the Spanish vessel the *St. Barbe*, which had shifted her anchorage two days before, in order to be more at hand for sailing out of the river with the first favourable wind. Their change of position brought on this accident, by which they had one man killed, and fourteen wounded, five of whom were dangerously hurt; and their mizen mast was shattered.

The next day we carried to the Governor's house, the compass invented by captain Mandillo a Genoese, for finding out the longitude. We wanted to make some observations upon land, which we had not been able to do upon the vessel all the time of our voyage, even when it was calm; because the fault of this compass, is, that the least motion disturbs the steadiness of the needle. During a calm, even when it lies quite even, it is more or less agitated. Notwithstanding all possible care was taken to preserve this compass, yet the damp of the sea air, which penetrates every where, had affected the needles, so as to make them a little rusty at the center, and near the parts which keep them in equilibrio. They had therefore lost that property which is necessary, and their magnetic virtue was likewise somewhat impaired. We cleared them from the rust, and recovered their magnetic powers; but we remitted our observations till another day, because it was now late, and we left the instrument with the Governor.

On this occasion we expressed our astonishment to the Governor, that the inhabitants of Montevideo should not think of procuring themselves shade in their gardens, and other extensive places, by planting of trees; and we mentioned our surprize also at observing, that the country seemed totally deprived of that benefit. He told us there were some trees along side the rivers, and that a country house which he had at the distance of about two leagues from the city was well furnished with them.

them. He proposed a party to go there on horseback the next day in the afternoon, after dining with him. We accepted of the ride with an intent not only of seeing the country, but at the same time to convince ourselves of the many wonderful and incredible things he and many others had told us of the horses of Paraguay.

The party being concluded on, the Governor took upon himself to provide us with a sufficient number of horses, which were to be ready about three or four o'clock.

The vicar had invited me to dine with him that day, in company with Mess. Duclos, the two brothers, first and second captain, M. de Belcourt, the paymaster of the Spanish troops, a Fleming who spoke the French language well, and the two sons of M. Duclos the elder. We went there, and during the whole dinner time, a mulatto played upon the harp. About the middle of dinner, another man, whom they called a civilized Indian, joined the former and accompanied him with his guitar. Then the vicar, who was the only ecclesiastic in town, called in four or five little blacks about eight or ten years old, and as many negro girls of the same age. He made them dance to the sound of his instruments, and the castanets they had in their hands. The children acquitted themselves with surprising agility and cleverness. One circumstance a little tiresome in these Indian dances, is, that almost all the same motions are repeated in every dance. It must also be allowed that there is no great variety in the tunes they sing or play. The musick of some of them, especially of the Sapatéo is pricked down in Frezier's account of a voyage to the South Sea.

They knew in this country, not only what the King of Portugal had done against the Jesuits in his dominions, but also what the parliaments of France, and the government, had enacted against this society. The vicar desired me to give him in writing an account of what was represented in that famous picture found among the Jesuits at Billom, in Auvergne, at the time when an inventory was there taken of the furniture and effects



effects of those fathers, after the condemnation and suppression of their institution in 1762, and 1763; and the secularization of its members. I satisfied his curiosity with regard to this authentic monument of Jesuitical folly. This vicar is a man of good sense, and generally beloved. He has thirty slaves, negroes and negro-women, great and small. It is his pleasure always to have somebody to dine with him. He gives his company a hearty welcome, and treats them well. He looks upon all his slaves as his children, and is beloved by them. He educates them well in order to give them afterwards their liberty, with forty or fifty cows or oxen, to put them in a way of keeping up their freedom. But he pays a particular regard, I may indeed say, he shews an uncommon degree of affection, for a little mulatto, almost white, who is the son of one of his mulatto slaves, as he was pleased to say by an Irish officer, but who bears in all the features of his face the strongest marks of being the vicar's own son. He told us he intended to send him into France to study, and to make a physician of him. The child is at present seven years old. When there is company, he makes him dine by himself, and when there is nobody, often with him. He has already settled five and twenty thousand piasters upon him. His living, and his own private income bring him in about four thousand, and he is now about sixty years old.

We were waited on at table by four negro women, by the mother of the little mulatto, who is also a mulatto, and by an Indian woman the wife of a Cacique, taken at the colony of St. Sacrament from the Portuguese, in the last siege the Spaniards laid to it. These women were all with child, though neither of them was married except the Indian, who knew not whether her husband was alive or dead. Neither men nor women in this country, are in the least scrupulous upon this article.

At the desert, Mess. de Bougainville, de Nerville, and l'Huillier de la Serre, came to meet us; and we all went together to the Governor's house, where we found horses ready for us. The  
Governor's

Governor's lady, dressed like an Amazon, and having a gold laced hat on, cocked after the military fashion, put herself at the head of our cavalcade, mounted upon a beautiful horse, whose value answered to his appearance. M. de Bougainville's horse was equally fine. With a kind of doubled pace, which resembled ambling, they always left us behind. It was all we could do to keep with them, some of us trotting, others on a canter. We continued this pace till we reached the country house, which we did not do till more than a full hour after our first setting out, though they told us it was no more than one league distant from Montevideo.

Father Rock, a Franciscan, was here waiting for us, with the Governor's son, a child of three years and a half, to whom this father was preceptor. We found a plentiful collation ready for us; and after drinking a glass, merely on account of the heat of the weather, we went to see the Governor's orchard, which he called a wood.

This country seat is nothing extraordinary with regard to the house; which consists of one single ground floor, as all the other houses do; on account of the violent winds, very frequent in this country, which might blow them down if they were built higher. The only remarkable thing here is a tolerably pretty room, which however has no other ornament than some geographical maps, fixed on the bare wall, and some wooden chairs covered with leather, which is figured with flower work.

At the distance of two or three gun shots from the house, the orchard is planted: this consists of apple, pear, peach, and fig trees, disposed in alleys, which are not very regular, except the middle walk, which reaches from one end of the orchard to the other, and is about a mile and a half in length. A pretty considerable brook winds through the orchard; which has probably hindered the walks from being cut strait. They are however extremely rural, on account of the number of tall, as well as low plants growing in them without cultivation. The balm especially abounds there. I acquainted the Governor, M. Belia,  
Z and



and another officer, with its virtues. They were the more pleased with my account, as the plant is extremely plentiful in this country, and they thought it might perhaps be used instead of the *Maté*.

The trees were so laden with fruit, that most of the branches, unable to support the weight, were already broken. We advised the Governor to have the others supported with props, more especially as he told us, that all these fruits were of the best and most excellent kind. We could not judge of this ourselves, as the time of their being ripe, was not till the end of February; at present however they had an exceeding fine appearance.

One might make a delightful walk of this orchard; but the Governor does not employ any body about it, because it is his intention to return to Europe, where he proposes to fix entirely.

As we were coming back, I spoke to father Roch, and held a conversation with him in Latin, upon several points of philosophy; which I soon found he had only studied in Aristotle's school, both by the barbarous and obsolete terms he made use of, and by the system he followed. He indeed confessed himself to be much attached to it. He told me, he was *a Peripatetic and a Scotist, and would remain so all his life*. He spoke pretty good Latin, and with facility. The greatest difficulty to me was his pronounciation of u as ou, and his manner of pronouncing the g, which the Spaniards always lose in their throats, pronouncing it nearly as an aspirate. Besides the attention this required of me in order to understand him, I was also obliged to consider of what I had to say, and at the same time to endeavour to catch his pronounciation, without which, he might not perhaps have comprehended me. A few days before, for the first time, I had been exactly in this situation with him. Having heard that he was a man of learning, I had been to pay him a visit at his convent. I inquired for him, in the Latin tongue, of one of his brethren who opened me the door. He made me a sign to walk in, without answering a single word. I went in,  
and

and meeting with three more brethren, I inquired for father Roch in the same language: and one of them answered me only, *Padre Fratre Roch? fuoras.* This was all I could get out of him. On this occasion as on many others I felt how disagreeable it was for a traveller to be unacquainted with the language of the country he is in. The want of comprehending exactly what others say; and the being obliged to be silent, when one has something of consequence to say, for fear of not being rightly understood, is a situation worse than that of a deaf man, who has at least the satisfaction of speaking, and making himself understood.

On returning a second time to the convent, I had the good fortune to meet with the superior, who answered me in good Latin, which he spoke, though with some little hesitation. He brought me into his cell, where we conversed together for a full half hour, after which father Roch came and joined us. In the course of this conversation, he informed me of some remedies, the success of which he had seen in repeated experiments. I give the receipts of some of them here, that any person who thinks proper may have an opportunity of trying them.

#### *Tooth-ach.*

Extract from the fuller's thistle, a worm which is always found in it when it is ripe. Rub this worm between the thumb and fore-finger, pressing it gently till it dies through weakness. One or other of these two fingers applied to the tooth will have, at least for a whole year after, the property of removing the pain.

#### *The Farcy in Horses.*

At the end of autumn collect the bearded protuberances, or kinds of chesnuts belonging to the eglantine: bruise the worm you will find in them, and make the horse swallow it in a glass of wine, or any other liquid; then cover him up warm.



*A foundered Horse.*

Let him take one or two spoonfulls of common salt, in half a pint of common water.

*Malignant Fevers.*

Under each sole of the patient's feet, apply a tench quite alive; without flitting them, or doing them any injury. Bind them on with linen rollers, take them off at the end of twelve hours, taking care if possible, not to inspire the smell that comes from them, then bury them quickly, or throw them down the house of office; and the patient will soon recover.

*Quinsy.*

Take as many earth worms alive as will make up the size of an egg; put them between two pieces of thin muslin, and apply them round the patient's bare throat. Renew the application every three hours for two days successively.

*Bleeding of the nose.*

Put into the patient's two nostrils, or behind both his ears, a small quantity of hair taken from the private parts of the sex different from the patient; and the blood will stop almost instantaneously.

*An infallible plaister for bringing out the small-pox when it has been driven in.*

Take some rye meal; mix it up with some rain water, some verjuice, a new laid egg, and half an ounce of orpiment finely powdered. Beat the whole well together, and spread it upon blotting paper. Sprinkle it with cloves in powder, and apply this poultice to the soles of the feet; it must be left there for the space of four and twenty hours, then taken off, and thrown quickly into the fire.

*Fluor.*

*Fluor Albus.*

Bruise the leaves of the plant called mouse-ear, and squeeze out the juice to the quantity of two ounces, which the patient must take fasting, in a cup of broth, or a glass of white wine. The dose must be repeated for some days successively, after some purging physic has been given to the patient; who will feed only upon meats of easy digestion, and will abstain from all kind of excess. The father assured me that this medicine had cured women in five or six days, who had been afflicted with this disorder for eight or ten years.

*Immoderate Menstrual Flux.*

Torrefy, upon a new earthen plate, or upon the fire-shovel well cleaned, as much hair, taken from the private parts of a healthy middle aged man, as one can hold between the finger and thumb. Reduce it to powder; and let the patient take it fasting in a glass of good red wine. For a suppression of the menses it must be taken in white wine. The remedy may be repeated a second time.

*Swelled Glands and other scrophulous Tumors.*

Apply one or two dead plantain leaves to them. Renew the application, with fresh plantain, twice a day. At the same time, let the patient take, every morning fasting, a warm infusion of walnut-tree leaves, in the same manner as tea.

*Colic, and Stitch in the Side.*

Let the root of the sun-flower be applied under the armpit of the same side where the pain is. As soon as it is grown warm there the colic goes off. This application was tried with success in an obstinate stitch of the side.

*Exostosis.*

Flatten a ball, which has killed an animal, and apply it immediately upon the part affected.

*Palsy.*



*Palsy.*

Boil some radishes in water, with a small quantity of gin, and drink it for common drink. One may also put radishes into the soup instead of common soup herbs.

*Ulcers.*

Chew the dried treadles of sheep, and apply them by way of poultice to the sore. Let the application be renewed morning and evening.

*Cancer and Ulcers.*

Put a large live toad into a new earthen pot, and over it put two ounces of rolls of sulphur in powder. Lute the pot well, and calcine the whole. Apply the ashes to the cancer.

*Corns and Warts.*

After having scratched them and taken off the hard part, rub them well with the mushrooms which grow naturally upon a dunghill.

*Pains after Child-birth.*

Boil two new laid eggs, and put into each of them a piece of sugar in powder, as big as a filbert; mix it well with the yolks, and let the lying-in woman take it, drinking over it a glass of good wine dashed with a little water.

*To promote the Discharge of the Lochia.*

Put two drachms of flower of sulphur into two glasses of boiling water; let this boil for a few minutes, then strain it through a linen rag, and let the liquor be taken.

*An Amulet against the Falling Sickness.*

Put into a crucible, upon a slow fire, one ounce of Spanish mercury, or mercury separated from cinnaber. When the mercury acquires a little heat, and begins to simmer, throw in one drachm of silver beaten very thin, and stir the whole well with a rod of iron, a little heated. Afterwards remove the crucible quickly

quickly from the fire, and pour out the contents, leaving them to grow cold, Put this amalgama into a small leathern bag, closely sowed up. Fasten this bag round the neck with a string, so as it should fall upon the pit of the stomach, where it must be constantly worn. Before this amulet is applied, the patient must be blooded in the cephalic vein, at the new moon. The bleeding must be repeated, at the new moon, the two following months.

*Bronchocele.*

Apply some common salt, well dried and a little warm, to the tumor. When the salt grows damp, let it be taken off, well dried, and then applied again; this process is to be repeated till the disorder is cured.

*Specks on the Eyes.*

Take of dragon's blood, of succotrine aloes, and of myrrh, equal quantities, and let them all be very finely powdered. Mix a sufficient quantity of this powder with the yolk of a new laid egg, so as to form a plaister, which is to be applied to the temple on the same side as the eye affected. When the plaister falls off of itself, put another on, and continue in this manner till the cure is completed.

*Pain in the Teeth, and how to make them fall out without Pain.*

Put into the hollow of the tooth three drops of spirit of sal ammoniac, and a small bit of cotton over it.

*Corns in the feet.*

Take off the indurated part, without making them bleed, then apply several times, the red sediment found at the bottom of a chamber pot, when the urine has been left any time in it. Then cover them with a piece of thin leather, repeating this till the corns are removed.



*Fluxion in the Breast.*

Set a pint of good cow's milk upon the fire; when it boils skim it two or three times, then throw in a large glass of good Spanish wine, and after it has boiled up twice, take it from the fire. When the milk is turned, strain off the whey through a linen rag, and let the patient drink a small glass full of it warm every quarter of an hour.

*To bring about the Delivery of a dead Child.*

Take some of the seed of the greater burdock, reduce it to powder, and let the patient take one drachm of it in a glass of wine.

*Convulsions in Children caused by Teething.*

Cut some of the root of wild valerian into small pieces. String them like the beads of a necklace, so as to make a necklace of them for the child; who is to wear it 'till the teeth have pierced the gum. The application may be renewed every fortnight.

*Dropsy.*

Let the patient take, fasting, as much of the mistletoe of eg-lantine in powder as will cover a farthing, after it is infused the whole night in a glass of white wine, which is also to be taken. Half of this dose only is given to women and children. This medicine was communicated to me by a Lieutenant of our frigate named Le Roy. He told me his father had tried it several times, and with success.

*Hysteric Vapours.*

Rub the inside of a saucer with garlic laid on very thick. Then apply the side rubbed with garlic to the navel. Hold it on 'till it sticks, and let it not be removed till it falls off of itself.

*Fistulæ*

*Fistulæ of all Kinds.*

Take the leaves of St. John's wort, of the lesser wormwood, and of the round birthwort, of each one handful: succotrine aloes, and myrrh in powder, of each one ounce. Let the whole be infused in two quarts of good white-wine, in a pot well glazed, and strongly luted upon a gentle heat, for three quarters of an hour: let it afterwards boil for a quarter of an hour: strain off the liquor when cold, and add to it one pint of good spirit of wine. Keep the whole in a bottle well corked.

This liquor is to be injected into the fistula five or six times a day, applying a tent or compress dipped in the same to the wound. This remedy has been tried several times successfully, by M. Duvernay, a surgeon of Chambery.

*For Disorders of the Eyes, even the Gutta Serena, an Optthalmic wonderful in its Effects.*

Take thirty-one live cray-fish, caught precisely when the sun and moon are in Cancer, and not at any other time. Take also of the roots, stalks, leaves and flowers of the celandine, gathered before sun-rise, as much as will equal the weight of the cray-fish. When all this has been well pounded together in a wooden or stone mortar, add of fennel-seed one ounce, of bean flower and camphor each half an ounce; cloves, hepatic aloes, prepared tutty, all in powder, of each two drachms. Mix the whole well in a mortar, and divide it afterwards into three parts. Put one of the parts into an alembic, and distil in B. M. till it is dry: take out the residuum, preserve it, and put a second part of the composition into the alembic, together with the water drawn off from the first distillation. Distil this again till it is dry. Take out the residuum a second time, keep it, and put in, in its stead, the third part of the composition, with all the water distilled. Let the distillation be repeated a third time. Afterwards calcine the three residuums in a close vessel, extract the salt by dissolution, filtration, and evaporation, *secundum artem*. Let the salt obtained be added to the distilled water, and



after the whole has digested on a slow fire, keep the liquor in a bottle well corked.

*Method of using the foregoing Application.*

Let the patient be purged at least twice with a mild cephalic medicine, leaving the interval of a day between the two doses; and if he is plethoric he must be bled once at the decline of the moon. Two or three drops of this collyrium are afterwards to be introduced into the eye morning and evening, with the black feather of a fowl's wing, and let a slight compress dipped in the liquor be applied over the eye.

During the use of this remedy, which must be continued about forty days for a gutta serena, one must be careful to keep the body open. For this purpose, if it should be necessary, glysters may be used, composed of river water only warmed. All melancholy things, and employments of too serious a nature, are also to be avoided; and the patient must likewise abstain from spices, salt meats, fellery, strong liquors, and in general from all excesses in eating, drinking, sitting up, &c. For other disorders in the eyes, the collyrium is to be continued till the cure is completed.

*An excellent and almost universal Balsam.*

Put into a glazed earthen pan, which will bear the fire, and which holds about five or six quarts of water, three pints of fine olive oil, half a pound of fresh yellow wax, cut into small pieces, half a pint of rose water; three pints of good red wine, and two ounces of red saunders in powder. Let the whole boil together for half an hour, stirring the mixture all the while with a wooden spatula. When this is done, throw in a pound of fine Venice turpentine, not of the common sort, with four ounces of good honey, and two drachms of camphor in powder. The finer sort of Venice turpentine is not sharp to the tongue, and has no disagreeable smell; it is white and not yellow. Mix the whole together by stirring it well with the spatula

Spatula for one or two minutes: take the pan off the fire, strain the balsam through a linen rag, and let it be kept in earthen pots.

*Use of the foregoing Balsam.*

For wounds, ulcers, mortifications, contusions, burns, rheumatic and other pains, the part affected is first either washed or fomented with a little warm red wine; afterwards the part is very freely anointed with the Balsam, and a piece of blotting-paper steeped in it is applied. This dressing is repeated morning and evening. If the wound penetrates any of the cavities of the body, the balsam is to be thrown up with a syringe, and the patient must take a drachm and a half, or two drachms of it, in each basin of broth, or in some decoction of vulnerary herbs. The same doze of this medicine may also be taken in the pleurisy, the cholic, and other internal pains, taking care at the same time to apply it warm externally, rubbing it in on the part where the pain is seated. I have tried this Balsam and always with success.

*For an inveterate Head-ach, caused by a Fluxion of Humours, and for an Hydrocephalus.*

Pound, in a wooden or stone mortar, ten or twelve tops of vervain, with some rye-meal, and five, or six, or more whites of eggs: the vervain may be omitted. Make a cataplasm of this, which must be applied to the nape of the neck, and over the shoulders, so as to cover almost the whole scapula. Let a fine napkin four times double be laid over it, and let it be left on for six or eight hours. If the patient is not then cured, a second poultice of the same kind is to be applied, which is to be left on as long as the other, or thereabouts. It very seldom happens that a third poultice is necessary. The patient must afterwards be purged. This poultice is equally beneficial in rheumatisms.



*A moist Asthma, Colds, and Disorders of the Breast.*

In an earthen or very clean copper pan, let one pound of ripe juniper berries, well bruised, be boiled for half an hour, with a pound of fresh unsalted butter, which has not been washed. Then let the butter be strained off, with a very strong expression of the juniper berries. To the quantity strained off, add an equal weight of the best honey, and let it be put upon an exceeding slow fire 'till it has acquired the consistence of a syrup, which is to be preserved in earthen pots. The bigness of a small nut, or the value of a tea-spoonful, is to be taken in the morning fasting, suffering it to melt in the mouth like a lozenge. The same doze is to be repeated at night going to bed. When the disorder is dangerous, a third dose may be taken three or four hours after dinner.

In common disorders of the breast the juniper berries may be left out.

All these remedies have not been communicated to me by the Franciscan father whom I have before mentioned; but having seen the good effects of almost all those I have given before, I have been very glad of this opportunity of making them known for the good of the public.

The day after our party of pleasure into the country, which I have spoken of, four Indians or Natives of the country came to present themselves to the Governor, while we were with him examining Captain Mandillo's compass. As soon as the Governor saw them coming into his court-yard, he had all the doors of his rooms shut up. Upon our asking him the reason of this, he told us, that the room would be infected for eight days, if they were suffered to come into it; and that the smell which exhaled from them fixed itself even on the walls. This smell proceeds from their anointing their bodies with a certain kind of oil and grease to preserve themselves from insects.

These Indians finding the door shut, came up to the window where we were, and one of them pulled out of a bag made of a tiger's skin, a paper written and folded up, which he presented.







*An Indian of Montevideo.*

The Governor received and read it, being written in the Spanish tongue. It was a certificate, in which several Spanish Governors declared successively, that the bearer of it was of the race of their Caciques or Princes, and that he himself was the chief of a village. The Governor returned the certificate, and the Indians asked him by signs for a sheet of paper instead of the one which before held the certificate, and which was now worn out in the folds by much use: the paper was immediately given to him. It is most probable that these Indians were unacquainted with the Spanish language, as they did not attempt to speak a single word of it. A Spanish officer told us, that they had spoken the Paraguay language, mixed with that of the Indians, in the neighbouring parts. They had no other dress than a kind of cloke made of several deer skins with the hair on, sewed together, so as to form a long square pretty much like a napkin. It is fastened about the shoulders with two straps, and appears as in the plate. The side next the skin was white, and painted red and blue grey in squares, rhombusses, and triangles, the disposal of which forms various compartments, according to the fancy, I suppose, of the person who is to wear it, or of the painter. These Indians often come into the town in companies of five, six, eight or ten, bringing their wives along with them. Their dwelling-places are not more than six or seven leagues distant from Montevideo, where they come to drink wine or brandy. As they have no coin among them, they give their little sacks of tiger skins, their clokes, sometimes the skins of wild beasts they have killed, but more commonly those they have sewed together to cloath themselves with. They give them almost for nothing; for they exchange one of these kinds of clokes, composed of eight deer skins, for a real, which is about six-pence English. A sack of tiger's skin, fourteen or fifteen inches long and twelve inches wide, costs no more than half a real. When any body has a mind for the clokes of these Indians, it is sufficient to take hold of it with one hand, and to offer a real or half a real with the other. The Indian immediately unties the strap, takes the piece  
of



of money, surrenders his cloke or little sack, which ever you want, and goes immediately quite naked to the first shop he can find to drink wine or brandy.

Their wives do the same. They have commonly no other clothing than the men, but now and then one sees some of them who have a piece of the same skin their dress is made of fastened round the waist with a strap.

It is prohibited to sell them such a quantity of wine or brandy as will make them drunk, for fear that drunkenness should lead them into some irregularities. M. de Bougainville being about to give a real to each of the four who came to the Governor's, the Governor desired him on this account to give them only half a one. Being one day at the vicar's, we were told that a company of eight or nine of them, men and women, were coming up to us. The clerk of our frigate immediately going to the door with a bit of bread he was eating, one of the Indians passing by took this bit of bread from him, stopped a moment, then eat it laughing, and afterwards went on to join the rest of his companions without saying a word. They were all of them bare-headed, their feet were naked, and they had no other clothing besides the cloke already spoken of. Some of them wore it upon their right shoulder, leaving the left arm and shoulder bare; others wore it on the opposite side. They wear the hair on the outside when it rains, and on the inside when it is fine weather.

Such of these Indians as I have seen, were perfectly strait and well-made, their arms and legs were well shaped, the chest well expanded, and all the muscles of their body strongly marked out. The women were much less than the men, who were all of a fine size. The women had, as well as the men, a lively look, a round but not a full face, pretty large eyes full of fire, a high forehead, a large mouth, and a wide nose, flattened a little at the tip; their lips are of a moderate size and their teeth white; their hair long, black, and harsh, falling carelessly about their necks, and sometimes even over their foreheads. As they grease  
their

their hair as well as their body with different ointments, it is glossy ; but always in disorder. These ointments however have nothing in them more disagreeable or dirty than the pomatums of this country.

It is said that when they are first born they have not that red, copper, bronze colour, which is generally spread all over their skin. It is true indeed, that the climate, the action of the air to which their skin, not covered with clothing, is continually exposed, the ointments and paint with which they smear their whole body, may contribute, at least in a great measure, to give them this colour. But when we consider that the Negroes themselves also do not come into the world with their skin black, which however is their proper colour, we may well imagine that the red copper colour of the Indians in South America is also natural to them.

The women are employed in the culture of manioc, and preparing it to make the cassavi, and their common drink ; they are also employed in household affairs, which consist only in sewing together deer and other beasts skins, which both men and women use for their clothing, and in preparing victuals for themselves and the men, who spend all their time in hunting, fishing, and riding out on horseback ; and indeed they are most excellent horsemen. The old men preside in each hamlet of huts, and stay at home with the young lads and girls, who have not yet acquired strength enough for any laborious work. Their form of government consists entirely in respecting their elders.

They are extremely dexterous at handling the sling, and at the management of the lance and the bow : they seldom miss their aim with the sling even on horseback and at full speed. A fierce bull, a tiger, or any other animal, or even a man himself, though ever so watchful, can hardly escape them. As it is necessary that the halter, which is the name they give it, should confine the animal they have a mind to seize, they push their horse at him strongly, so as throw the halter in such a manner that the animal finds himself dragged away with so much rapidity that



that he has not time either to disentangle or defend himself. In their private quarrels with one another, they also use these slings, and a half lance. The only method of avoiding this sling, if in an open plain, is to lie down all along upon the ground, as soon as they take the instrument in hand, and to keep close to the earth. Another method of avoiding it is, by sticking one's self close to a tree, or to the wall.

These halters or slings are cut out of bulls hides. They twist this strap, and make it flexible by greasing and stretching it out, till it is reduced to half a finger's breadth. Nevertheless it is so strong that a bull cannot break it, and it resists more than a hempen cord would do, which would also be less flexible, and therefore less fit for this purpose.

One can hardly get the skins of tigers and other wild beasts any otherwise than from the Indians. Nevertheless they are not dear, though rather scarce at Montevideo. One of the finest of them may be bought for two or three piasters. I bought a very beautiful tiger's skin of a middling size, sowed up in form of a bag, for a piece of eight. The Indians kill but few tigers, though they eat them; because they make use of these skins only for the little bags I have mentioned. In these bags they carry the cassavi root, which serves for their nourishment, and the heads of their arrows, which they do not fasten to the reeds, till they are going to make use of them. This head of the arrow has the figure and size of a laurel-leaf, when much lengthened out at the two extremities. They fix it into the reed by either end indifferently, because it is pointed and sharp at both extremities. These arrows are the more fatal, as the head of them, not being firmly fixed, remains in the wound, upon attempting to draw out the reed.

When they want to catch an animal in the sling, they ride after him at full gallop, holding the horses bridle in one hand, and in the other the sling, which they throw at the neck, legs, or horns of the animal. When it is a furious or wild beast three or four of them together ride after him, each laying hold of a limb

limb in the sling, then separating, one to the right and another to the left, the sling is tightened by this means, and another of them comes up without danger, either to kill the animal with his half lance, or to tie him and bring him away.

The Indians have other methods of hunting, which are described in the accounts of several authors, especially in M. Muratori's work on the Paraguay.

I shall take this opportunity of acquainting the public, that M. Muratori's book is entirely written from the memoirs furnished him by the Jesuits or some of their people, who were certainly so much concerned as not to be willing to inform the public of all their transactions. Some Spanish officers of credit, sent from the court of Madrid to Paraguay, in the time of the division of the respective possessions of the courts of Spain and Portugal, have assured me, that all the pamphlets they had seen in that country relative to the conduct of the Jesuits, whether respecting the Indians or the interests of these two kingdoms, were always written with a great deal of caution in regard to the Jesuits. He also told me, that one of these fathers, among the chief in the country, had made the following answer in his presence, to one of the Spanish general officers, who was expressing his astonishment at the obstacles which the Jesuits opposed to the dispositions concerted and fixed upon between the two courts. "I have much more reason to be surprized, that these two kings should make dispositions for dividing a country which does not belong to them. We Jesuits alone have conquered it; we alone have the right to dispose of it, to keep and defend it, from all, and against all." With such principles as these, one may easily imagine what the conduct of the Jesuits would be. It is certain that the Indians of Paraguay are subjects only to this society, either at home in their families, or when they go out in arms. When the Spaniards lately besieged and took from the Portuguese the colony of St. Sacrament, which is about thirty leagues distant from Montevideo, they were assisted by about a thousand Indians, at whose head was a Jesuit, who commanded them in



chief, and without whose order, these Indians would not have advanced one step, nor have fired a single musket. The Governor of Montevideo, who commanded the Spaniards, and several other officers present at this attack, told me, they were obliged to settle the plan of operations with the Jesuit, who afterwards gave out his orders in his own name to the Indians, who were encamped separately from the Spaniards.

Dragoons are almost the only troops of that country. Their horses are equipped in the same manner as at Paraguay. All the men wear the *Ponchos*, which they find more convenient than the cloke both for the horse and his rider.

The *Ponchos*, as I have said before, is a piece of stuff formed like the coverlet of a bed, two or three ells long, and two ells wide. One must pass one's head through a slit in the middle, to put it on. It hangs down on both sides, and behind as well as before. It is wore on horseback and on foot. The poor people and the negroes never take it off till they go to bed. It does not hinder them from working, because it may be thrown back at the sides over the shoulders; by which means the arms and the fore-part of the body are at liberty.

This kind of garment is fashionable on horseback, even for both sexes, and among persons of all ranks. It is easy, however, to distinguish ranks and sexes, notwithstanding the simplicity of the *Ponchos*. Riding on horseback is so common among the women, that they are as ready and alert at this exercise as the men. The differences by which the rank and sex may be distinguished with regard to the *Ponchos*, consist in the fineness, lightness and richness of the stuff.

The horses are not shod in this country. The saddle and furniture are also different from those used in Europe. They first put upon the horse's bare back a piece of coarse soft stuff, of a loose texture, which they call *Schneideros*; over that a girth, then a piece of strong leather of the size of the saddle, which hanging over the horse's crupper serves for housing. This is called *Carneros*. Over this leather is placed the saddle, made like that we

use for pack-horses, and over the saddle they throw one or more sheep skins, sewed together. This they call the *Peilbon*. Above all this they put a second girth, or surcingle, to fasten the whole. The stirrups are small and narrow, for they only put the end of the shoe into them; and those who go bare-footed, rest only the point of the great toe. The bit of the bridle is iron, all of one piece, and without studs. The reins are composed of several small straps, interwoven with each other, as the strings of a bell or clock; and are at least six feet and a half, or seven feet in length, as they serve at the same time for a whip. A semi-circular bar of iron, attached to the same piece which receives the horse's lower jaw, produces the same effect as the curb. That part of the Carneros which projects beyond the saddle, and falls upon the crupper, is figured.

On the 9th instant, the Governor, the major of the troops, and their ladies, came on board the *Eagle* frigate about noon, where we gave them as good a dinner as we could. The air of the sea, or the motion of the ship, though scarce perceptible, were rather troublesome to the major's lady, and made her so sick, that she could neither eat nor drink any thing, except a couple of oranges, and was obliged to quit the cabin where we were at dinner, to go and breathe the fresh air upon deck. This circumstance rather disturbed our entertainment, and obliged the company to return to the city very early.

As we were attending them to shore in our cutter, we perceived an exceeding foetid smell, much resembling the putrid exhalation from the carcase of an animal that has been dead a great while. We thought at first that it had proceeded from the dead body of some bull, killed and left upon the shore till it was putrified, from whence the wind might bring it to us. The Governor undeceived us; assuring us, that it was the exhalation of the urine of an animal named *Zorillos*, who was either angry, or pursued by some other animal.

The *Zorillos* is of the size of a weasel, not quite so long, with redd sh hair, lighter under the belly which is almost grey. Two



white lines extend the whole length of the back, forming, from the neck to the tail, almost an oval. The tail is very bushy, and the animal always keeps it raised up as the squirrel does. When he finds himself pursued, or is provoked by any thing, he immediately expels his urine, which infects the air, to the extent of more than a mile and a half, with an almost insupportable smell of carrion. We perceived this smell two or three times while we were on board our frigate, though we were more than four miles and a half distant from land: it is true indeed, that the wind blew from the land. M. Duclos, our captain, had already told us of this, but we had not taken his word for it. The fact was confirmed to us by the vicar of Montevideo, who made a present to M. Duclos of a fur lining made with the skins of this animal sewed together. These skins have no bad smell. The Zorillos is perhaps the same as the *Stinkbingssem*, or *enfant du diable* (devil's child) of Canada, the urine of which produces nearly the same effects. The *Chinche* of the southern parts of America also resembles much the Zorillos.

Another animal very common in these parts, and about Buenos Ayres, is the Tatu-apara, which we call *Tatou*, the Spaniards *Armadillo*, and the Portuguese *Encubertado*. As this animal is very well known, I shall not give any description of it. Ximenez says, that the scales of the Armadillo, reduced to powder and taken to the quantity of one drachm in a decoction of sage, brings on a perspiration so salutary, that it cures the venereal disease; and that it throws out splinters from all parts of the body: and according to Monades, liv. xv. pag. 552, the small bones of this animal's tail cure a deafness.

Notwithstanding the risk there was in selling of any merchandize at Montevideo, and the difficulties our people met with in disembarking them, to prevent their being seized; yet several of our officers and many of the crew, who had got together some few things, in hopes of selling them at the French island, and at the East Indies, where they thought they were going, got rid of them, and were selling them every day.

day. Our ship being the first vessel which had put in at this place since the peace, our things sold very well. The guards seized upon some packets brought on shore with too little caution. They even threw yesterday into prison two cockswains, on whom these packets were found. M. de Bougainville being informed of this, exclaimed and stormed very much against these cockswains, saying, they deserved to be treated as they were. He went to the officer, repeated the same thing to him, and desired only that his uniform, which the prisoners had on when they were taken up, might be delivered; that as for the men they might keep them, to intimidate the rest, and that he himself would put them in irons if they were released. By this behaviour, M. de Bougainville persuaded them that he did not countenance this practice. The parcels and the men were both given up, and it was even desired that the men might be excused. From this circumstance, it was easily found out that our people had not taken proper measures. A serjeant having complained on this occasion, that he had not received the value of one real, though he had assisted in bringing many parcels on shore, and that he had, as he said, wore out a pair of shoes in going about the town to shew such of our people as had any thing to sell, into the proper houses; this declaration made us understand that we should not meet with so many difficulties, if we did but distribute a few piasters among the officers and guards. We began therefore by giving away a few pieces of eight, a few shirts, &c. and every body was very ready to let us do as we pleased, even the officer himself placed there on purpose to prevent any kind of trade. As we were supposed not to have any Spanish coin, and that French coin was not current in that country, M. de Bougainville asked and obtained leave to sell some butts of wine, brandy, oil, and some other superfluous goods he had, in order to pay for the flour, and the fresh meat, the Governor had always taken care to provide for us every day at the port; as well as for the oxen, cows, horses and other animals, he wanted to buy. It was now time to think of quit-  
ting



ting Montevideo, in order to go to the place of our destination. We therefore provided ourselves with every thing we thought necessary for this purpose: the quantity of water, flour, and animals M. de Bougainville asked for, excited the curiosity of the Governor with regard to the design of our voyage. All the crew, even the officers themselves, were perfectly ignorant as to this point, and thought, as I said before, that we were going to the East Indies. This report had been propagated, and M. de Bougainville confirmed it, by telling the Governor we were going to the Indies, without specifying to which of them.

The trouble necessarily attending these preparations prevented us from day to day from trying to make any accurate observations with the instrument or compass of captain Mandillo, so that we did not think of fetching it from the Governor's till we were just preparing to set sail. As it is of the greatest consequence to take advantage of the first favourable wind, especially in the harbour of Rio de la Plata, where the anchorage is so dangerous; and as we saw that this compass could not be of much use to us with regard to the longitude, M. de Bougainville resolved to leave it with the Governor. He wrote to him by the captain of a schooner, to desire that he would keep this instrument, and at his return into Spain \* send it to him in France. All the rest of the time we staid in the harbour, was employed in preparations for our voyage. Our frigates were carefully inspected, and every possible precaution taken. Having brought  
on

\* The Governor had told us, he expected to go back into Europe towards the end of the year; but we learned, on our arrival at Paris, that he would not quit his government so soon. M. de Grimaldi, the Spanish ambassador in France, asked M. de Bougainville several questions, upon this Governor's behaviour to us. M. de Bougainville having given by his answers a proper testimony of the probity of Don Joseph Joachim de Viana, and of his strict observance of the duties of his station; the ambassador confessed, that the Jesuits and their friends had sent over to Madrid memorials against him, to injure him in the King's opinion, that he might be recalled, and that they might have some Governor devoted to them in his stead. M. de Grimaldi justified Don de Viana to his court; which probably prevented the King from recalling him as soon as he wished. The public news-papers have informed us of this gentleman's being continued in the same government.

on board twelve cows, or heifers, six mares, two colts, and two Hungarian horses, twelve goats or kids, eleven sows, and one boar, fourteen or fifteen sheep, two rams, and a great quantity of fowls and ducks, we set sail on Tuesday the 16th of January 1764.

At three in the morning, the wind, which for ten days past had been constantly South East, shifted to the North. The gale being moderate, we took this opportunity to unmoor. We heaved a peak to our best bower anchor, shipped the longboat and other boats, one of which had landed the *Sieur Sirandré* Lieutenant, with a letter of thanks to the Governor, from M. de Bougainville and the rest. At nine o'clock we set sail with the *Sphinx* and the Spanish frigate the *St. Barbe*, which we soon forereached, though she was at least two full leagues and a half ahead of us. We steered half a league S. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. about as far S. E. then directed our course S. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  E. in order to double a point, which consists of a chain of rocks on the South West of the fortress, extending near a league out in the river. When we set sail it blew a pretty fresh gale at North West. The wind abated gradually and a calm succeeded; infomuch that, at half an hour past three in the afternoon, the ship making no way, we anchored in six fathom and a half water, muddy bottom. The *Sphinx*, together with the *St. Barbe*, anchored at the distance of a long musket shot from our stern. During the calm we caught three very beautiful butterflies, particularly one delineated in the plate \*.

Our anchorage in the road of Montevideo was not absolutely bad; but I am of opinion it would have been better higher up in the bay. During the whole time that we remained there, we were constantly on the alarm, as well on account of the *Pampéros*, which almost always rises on a sudden, as of the South East and South West winds, which blow full into the mouth of

\* I gave it the name of the parrot, because the various colours of its wings exactly resemble those of the most beautiful parrot of Brazil. Its body is of the finest green, streaked with red,



the bay, and occasion so high a sea as to make it impossible to leave any of our boats along-side the vessel. We were every night obliged to ship them.

The little boat being only once forgot, it got loose and had like to have been lost, as I have before related. When you are farther within the bay, you have nearly the same depth of water, the same bottom, and are sheltered by the mountain on one side, and the town on the other.

We set sail about eight in the evening, and continued our course the next day without any remarkable occurrence.

On the nineteenth, near two o'clock in the afternoon, an extraordinary kind of fish passed near the vessel. We had seen a great many before; but they being at too great a distance from the ship, we had not been able to catch any of them. Perceiving that they assembled to-day round the side of the frigate, I got a sailor to throw a bucket fastened to the end of a rope into the sea, and he had the good fortune to take one. Our mariners give them the name of *Galere*, or sea-nettle. It is a kind of bladder, which may be ranked under the same genus with what the naturalists call *Holoturiæ*, which, without any resemblance either of a plant or a fish, are nevertheless, really possessed of life, and transport themselves like animals from place to place with a motion peculiar to themselves, independently of the assistance of wind and waves on which you see these bladders carried like small vessels. Any one who did not observe this appearance of a bladder with a nice and judicious eye, would take it for a bubble of air floating on the surface and driven by the waves and winds. But the sailor who had caught it having brought it to me, I had sufficient time to examine it. I observed in it a peristaltic motion, such as anatomists ascribe to the intestines and stomach. I was just on the point of taking it out of the bucket with my hand, when M. Duclos our captain caught hold of my arm, and bid me take care lest I should soon have reason to repent of so doing, by the acute pains I should feel in every part of my hand, which should happen to  
come

come in contact with the filaments, of a violet blue colour attached to this bladder. I therefore contented myself with viewing this sea-nettle and taking a sketch of it.

The captain's observation was verified the same day. A cabin-boy having caught another of these fish, had the imprudence to take hold of it with his hand. The filaments, twisted themselves round it. The moment after, he began to cry out that he felt a smarting and very painful heat on all the back of the hand, and the wrist. He shook it immediately to get rid of the fish; but it was now too late. His cries hastened us to his assistance; he wept, and stamped, complaining that his hand seemed to be in a fire. It was bathed in oil; a compress dipt in the same liquid was applied to it, but the pain still continued more than two hours; when it went off gradually.

The sea-nettle is an oblong bladder, flattened underneath, rounded in its circumference, and blunted as it were at its extremities; from whence proceed those filaments, the touch of which occasions so much pain. One of these extremities is more rounded than the other; which is rather lengthened. The part which forms the base or resting point of this bladder is plaited about the edges. The whole is a membrane of a very delicate structure, transparent, and nearly of the same figure as those half globules, which rise on the surface of the water in summer showers, especially when they fall in large drops. It is always empty, but distended like a football. This membrane has fibres, some of which are circular, others longitudinal, by means of which the peristaltic motion is carried on.

At the longest of its extremities it contains a small quantity of the clearest water, which is prevented from communicating with the rest of the cavity by a membranous partition. The fibre which passes over the back, from the fore to the hind part, is raised, scolloped at the edges, plaited like a beautiful tuft, of a lively green, blue, and purple colour, extended in the form of a sail. It lowers, elevates or shifts, as it were to set itself for the wind. From the two extremities of the plait, proceed some



filaments of different lengths, and of the same colour with this kind of sail: two of them are very short, and as thick as a large quill; these afterwards branch out into several others of lesser thickness, but much longer; and these again into others, still longer and smaller, to the number of eight in all. They are about a foot long; but not all of equal length. These strings, interwoven with each other, resemble a net whose meshes are of different sizes. They have a kind of articulation, formed by small circular rings, in which one may likewise observe a contractile motion. These filaments resemble loose tassels, composed of strings of a sky colour tinged with purple, and of a greenish cast, nearly transparent, and of different lengths, the edges of which appear to be indented, and alternately intermixed with grey violet and flame colour.

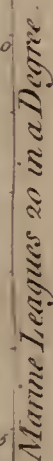
The largest sea-nettles I have seen were about seven inches long at their under part, and five in height. It would be very difficult to determine precisely the colour of this extraordinary fish. The bladder is as clear and transparent as the finest chrystal; but its edges, back and legs may be said to contain the colours of the rainbow, or of the flame of sulphur. We saw a great number in our passage, particularly in the streight which forms the island of St. Catherine, at Brazil; and I believe they are common in these latitudes. If the bare touch of this animal causes so much pain, what can we think its effect must be in the bodies of fish or other animals who feed upon it? It has this surprising quality, says Father Labat, that it taints and poisons the flesh of fishes without occasioning their death.—This is pretty nearly the effect of the fruit of the manchineel-tree.

On the 20th we perceived that the currents ran to the S.S.W. which confirms the observation in the account of Admiral Anson's voyage. The tides carried us 30 min. Southward; and there is reason to believe that their course is to the S.S.W. agreeable to the bearing of the coast.

On Sunday the 22d in the morning the wind, which the day before had blown very fresh till four in the afternoon, grew calm, with







By Thomas Jefferys, Geographer,  
to the KING.



with fair weather and a fine sea. We saw some *Dadins*, sea-fowls which are found common in almost all latitudes, and some large birds called *Quebranta-hueffos*, as well as some *King-fishers*, which our mariners call likewise *Puans*. 'Tis said that when these last appear, there seldom fails to be foul weather, and often storms, either on that or the next day.

In fact, the S. S. W. wind we had, soon after blew with violence: the sea ran high, the weather became foggy, and it rained a little at intervals.

In the evening of the 23d we saw several birds, and some very long and large and well formed beds of fishes fry, of a reddish cast. Most of them extended beyond our sight in length, and some were about a hundred feet in breadth.

On the 24th we saw eight or ten whales, a great number of birds, and a kind of sea-weed, which our mariners called *Baudreu*.

On the 25th the wind blew very fresh from the N. W. till five in the evening. The rolling of the ship was so constant and violent, that we lost a goat, two sheep, and three cows. Several others fell sick, as well as the horses we took on board at Montevideo.

The weather grew dark and rainy. At six o'clock the wind rather abated, and shifted to the West, then to the West South West, to the South, a gentle gale. The sea likewise gradually subsided.

On the 26th we observed that the tides turned towards the North. We again met with several birds, and some sea-grass. The sea still continued much agitated till seven in the evening. We were obliged to kill one cow and a goat, taken ill with the rolling of the ship. The sea soon after grew calm, and continued so almost the whole night. In the evening of the 27th we saw a quantity of birds, among which were several king-fishers. The wind blew with great violence, and the weather became dull and foggy. This lasted almost the whole night, and destroyed



a very fine stallion, whom we were obliged to throw overboard, as well as a goat and a sheep.

On Saturday the 28th we saw a whale, two sea-wolves, and two penguins; in the afternoon there appeared great numbers of ospreys, and sea-cobs, and we met with some sea-grass, with long leaves. On Sunday the 29th, about three in the afternoon, some pretty large fishes appeared near the surface of the water. Several of our mariners who have been used to fish at Newfoundland, assured us, that they were stock-fish.

On the 31st, at six in the morning, we descried land at the distance of about six leagues. We took this land for islands. We had then a strong gale, which abating about eleven, we steered E. S. E. till noon, when we made the southermost point of land, bearing S. E. five degrees E. about a league distant. The most eastern point bore E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. E. distance two leagues, and all these lands appeared to be islands.

The figure of these islands, which form a triangle, as the Sebald islands are said to do, and the idea we entertained of our being near these, induced us at first to believe that these three islands we saw were actually the Sebaldes.

On this account, according to our observations at noon, we found them placed in Belin's French chart thirty leagues too far to the west; and we were the more deceived in our observation, on account of its agreeing with Father Feuillée's and with a manuscript chart which M. de Choiseul gave to M. de Bougainville, before we left Paris. See these islands in the plate as they appeared to us at two leagues distance, the Cape lying East-South-East.

This chart of M. de Bougainville's extends the eastern verges of the Malouine islands to 57 degrees 15 minutes longitude; and Father Feuillée places the same extremity of these islands in  $57=45$ : the latitude agrees also pretty exactly. M. Belin fixes it at 62 degrees. We shall be better able to determine which of the two is in the right when we land, as we intend to do.

In

In the afternoon we had a fresh gale at N. W. As we kept coasting along the shore we sounded at three o'clock, at 45 fathoms, a flinty bottom. At four we sounded at 40 fathoms, flinty bottom mixed with broken shells, we were then half a league distant from two flat islands, which at first view appeared to be covered with small copse, but these were only tall bulrushes with flat and large leaves called corn-flags, as we discovered afterwards on landing; the coast being quite full of these corn-flags, as it now appeared to us. Sounded again, and found a rocky bottom at twenty-four fathom.

In the afternoon of the 31<sup>st</sup>, we coasted along the shore, at the distance of about a league and sometimes only half a league, in order to observe it with greater advantage. We sounded from time to time at thirty-five fathom depth, grey sandy bottom.

The lands are of a moderate height from the sea, with eminences, some behind others; a proof that this is either the continent, or the largest of the islands. Almost all the shores were covered with bulrushes which looked like small trees. This appearance is occasioned by the corn-flags growing each of them about two feet and a half high, and afterwards shooting forth a tuft of green leaves nearly of the same height. This we had an opportunity of observing more particularly when we landed. We saw no wood, and at this distance the soil of the country appeared parched and dry; perhaps the heat of summer might have withered the grass.

At three o'clock we saw a small island two leagues wide of the coast. It nearly resembled in figure that on which the *Fort de la Conchée* near St. Malo is built. M. Bougainville gave it the name of the Tower of Biffy \*. At five, we discovered a Cape, and a small island, resembling Cape Frehel, situated four leagues from St. Malo. This Cape seemed to terminate the land to the East.

On

\* This is the entrance of the streight which divides the island into two parts, the eastern and the western. This streight runs from North to South.



On the first of February, we perceived another Cape and a small island almost similar to those which reminded us of Cape Frehel; and after that, another small one intirely covered with birds. At noon, the wind blowing strong with squalls and rain, caused so violent a rolling of the ship, that our cattle suffered much from it. At last we determined to kill several sick cows, fearing they should die, and we should be obliged to throw them over-board, as we had the fine bull we had brought with us from St. Catherine's island, as well as some goats and several sheep.

At six in the evening the weather being then fine, with a gentle breeze, we determined to send out the fishing-boat which was manned for that purpose. Messrs. Donat and Le Roy the lieutenant, went on board with a sufficient number of seamen, all well armed. They were sent on shore to cut grass for our cattle, who began to be in want of it. We were then about two leagues from the point which appeared woody. We were becalmed till about eight o'clock. The tide drove us towards the shore upon a shoal of rocks. In this embarrassing situation, from which it was impossible to extricate ourselves for want of wind, we founded with a view of casting anchor, if the bottom should be good. But the bottom proving rocky at between eighteen and twenty fathom, our perplexity increased, and with the more reason as the tide had already carried us towards the shoal, which lined a pretty large creek, and we were scarce half a quarter of a league from it. The Sphinx laboured under the same difficulty, and we were already contriving means to save our lives in case we should be shipwrecked upon these rocks, which the mariners call *the Carpenters*; because a ship which has the misfortune to run aground here, is soon dashed to pieces. Fortunately, about eight o'clock, a very faint breeze blew from the shore; and our officers, equally attentive and able to avail themselves of the smallest advantage, ordered the working of the ship so skilfully, that we got clear of the shore. The ship's crew were so fully sensible of the danger we were in, that in the most tempestuous weather, and even during the storm we suffered near the Maldonnades, they never worked the

the ship with so much alacrity and diligence. It was a fine sight to see every one at his post, holding in his hand the ropes he was to manage : all, in an attitude, in which was pictured anxiety and fear mixed with hope ; all, observing the most profound silence, their eyes fixed upon the captain, and their ears attentive to catch the first word of command : the two captains and the lieutenants, and all the ship's company, employed in looking, some on the side of the ship towards the sea, others towards the land, to observe if any one could perceive the smallest breeze rising, and ruffling the surface of the water which was almost as smooth as glass. One turned his cheek, another held his hand, and a third wetting his, extended it towards the quarter from which they imagined the wind began to blow in order to perceive the least motion. At length the long wished-for breeze arose, but blew very faintly ; fear gave place to joy and satisfaction, and to prevent our being again involved in the same difficulties, we steered away North East  $\frac{1}{4}$  East, five degrees East.

About eleven our fishing-boat returned loaded with greens, and was taken on board. Messrs. Donat and Le Roy informed us, that they had seen at land, about the distance of a musket-shot from the place they were in, an animal of a terrible appearance and astonishing size lying upon the grass ; his head and mane resembling a lion's, and his whole body covered with hair, of a dusky red as long as a goat's. This animal perceiving them, raised himself upon his fore-feet, eyed them a moment, and then lay down again ; having afterwards fired at a bustard, which they killed, the enormous animal raised himself a second time, eyed them as before without changing his situation, and then lay down again. According to their account, this animal seemed to be as large as two oxen, and twelve or fourteen feet in length. They had a mind to fire at him, but they were terrified, and durst not fire for fear of wounding him slightly and hazarding their lives ; or, according to their own account, they were unwilling to lose time, as it was late, and they were desirous of returning on board.



On the third about noon we discovered an opening of a bay \*, the entrance of which appeared so fine, that we went into it full sail, as into a well-known and commodious harbour. We anchored about three leagues within the bay, which appeared to extend at least as many leagues beyond us. At the farthest extremity we discovered larger and smaller islands, where the fishing boat sounded at four, five, six fathoms and more, in a muddy bottom. The *Sieur Donat* having been sent thither immediately after we came to anchor, informed us, on his return, at ten in the evening, that it was every where at least between eight and ten fathom, and between seven and eight to the East of the island, with a bottom of muddy sand throughout, which secured us a retreat in case of bad weather at sea.

This bay, the plan and figure of which is given in the plate, is capable of containing at least a thousand vessels, and as many more to the west of the large and small islands, which are sheltered from all winds, and are, as our mariners say, more safe than in the harbour of Brest.

As soon as we had dined, we sent out the yawl and long-boat, and Messrs. de Bougainville, Nerville, Belcourt, l' Huillier, Donat, Sirandré and myself, landed on the south side of the bay. As we were going to shore, a prodigious number of black and white birds, of the same species, crossed in large flocks, no more than five or six feet above our heads. We killed some of them. Those which fell into the sea wounded, only dived when we attempted to take them up. Before we landed, we shot bustards, geese and ducks, which did not fly away when we approached them; but walked near us, as if they had been tame.

While we were at a distance from the land, its appearance deceived us. We expected to find the face of the country dry and parched, but on setting foot upon it, we found it entirely covered with herbage, or a kind of hay, a foot, or a foot and half high,

\* See the entrance of this bay in the plate. It is situated on the eastern side of the Malouine islands; and may be seen at the distance of three leagues.

high, reaching even to the tops of the hills, which we had much ado to climb, on account of this hay obstructing our passage.

We ascended in companies, while some took separate routs for shooting, both upon the hills, and along the coast. We were much fatigued in climbing these hills, there being no road or path through this herbage, which is probably coeval with the soil.

We walked up to the knees in this hay; and the soil, which appears to be a dark brown, is formed into a mould by the annual decay of the hay, and rises with a spring under your feet, owing to the roots which are intangled with it. Hence it is evident, that one cannot walk for any time over such a path without being fatigued. But we were luckily provided with some small bottles of brandy, and some sea-biscuit, which were of great service, as we should otherwise have suffered from the intense heat.

Here we met with some green hillocks, raised sometimes more than three feet from the surface. I examined one of these with attention, and found that a resinous gum oozed from it, which is white at first while it is soft, and of an amber colour when it hardens. I gathered some pieces of it, which I perceived had at least as strong an aromatic smell as frankincense: but could not determine at that time the exact resemblance this gum bears to other gums or resins which have hitherto been discovered. I brought away near the weight of half a drachm in grains or drops, some of the size of a round pea, others of that of a kidney bean. When I returned on board, I shewed them to M. de Bougainville and our two surgeons. I held some of it on the point of a knife in the flame of a candle; it burnt like the finest resin, emitting an agreeable smell, and leaving behind it a blackish oil, which did not burn, but grew hard and brittle when it was cold. I attempted to dissolve this oil in common water, but without effect: from which I concluded, that it would be very proper to make an excellent varnish. Having mentioned it the next day to M. Frontgouffe, surgeon of the Sphinx, he went on shore, and having collected some of this gum, conjectured from its smell and

D d

taste



taste that it was gum ammoniac. On comparing these, we found they agreed in taste and smell, and were reduced to the same substance after burning. The smell is retained so strongly on the fingers, that tho' I washed my hands more than once with sea-water, I could not get rid of it all that day and the next. This resinous gum only dissolves partly in spirit of wine, which it tinges with an amber colour. The residuum becomes spongy and burns as it did before it was dissolved: the third residuum does not dissolve in common water. Aqua-fortis has no effect upon it.

These hillocks are formed by a single plant, from which proceed small spongy stalks gradually dropping their leaves like the palm-tree. These leaves are tripartite, as may be seen in the plate, where the plant is represented in its natural size. They are of the thickness of those of purslain, but of a fine green, ranged very close to each other, disposed in a circle, and forming a cavity in the center which is scarce discernible. This is a kind of very flat funnel, the inside of which is lined with these leaves placed close one above another, imbricate like those of an artichoke. See the figure of it in the plate.

From the center and edges of these leaves, when they are bruised or only scratched, or when the resinous juice is too plentiful in them, this resinous gum, which congeals in the air, is produced. On cutting, scraping or even rubbing the surface, there issues a kind of cream which is white and viscous, and ropes between the fingers sticking fast to them like glue. I have given it the name of the *varnish plant*.

The inside of these hillocks is formed into a vault, supported by stalks and branches, whose leaves, having no air, are brown and withered. Other plants sometimes shoot forth on the inside of this vault, penetrate through the hillock, and rise above it. These hillocks, when they are not broken, are sufficiently firm, not only to support a person sitting upon them, but walking over them. The vault, however, is easily broken through, by stamping upon it with some force, and it is easy to tear off large pieces with one's hands. The root and the stalks when

broken, yield the same white resin, which flows out like the white juice or milk of the plant called *Tithymalus*, which I shall speak of hereafter.

In the evening our sportsmen returned loaded with geese, buffards, ducks, teals, and a black and white bird already mentioned. I had separated from my companions, and wandered alone along the coast a league beyond the place where the boat had landed. I shot some ducks four or five feet from the shore. As I did not care to go into the water, I imprudently drew them to me with the end of my piece. The plenty of game engaged me to load again without recollecting that the barrel might have taken water. The powder was so wet that it would not take fire: and having no screw, I resolved to repair to the boat. I had scarce advanced twenty steps, before I perceived in the grass a path eight or nine inches broad, very much worn, which ran parallel to the shore at ten or twelve feet distance from the sea. I then imagined, that the island was inhabited, if not by men, at least by quadrupeds which frequented that spot. But as I did not know what these animals were, they might possibly be of the savage kind; and I was apprehensive lest I should meet with some of them in my way. Unattended as I was, without any other defence than a musket now become useless, I was rather anxious for my safety. I fixed my bayonet to the end of my piece, and pursued my journey in this tract, being desirous to know where it terminated. At the distance of about two hundred steps from the place where I entered it, it led into a thicket of those kinds of corn-flags I have already mentioned. Not daring to venture into it, I stopt a few minutes as I passed near it: I observed it attentively, and listened to hear whether any thing stirred. I could perceive neither motion nor noise. I continued my march, and re-entered the path on the other side, till I discovered the boat, in which, our seamen perceiving that night was approaching, and that the several parties who had gone on shore to reconnoitre and hunt were not returned, came to meet, and take us on board. It was almost full of game, and the night



obliged us to throw into the sea a great part of what we had procured in the day.

On Saturday the 4th at six in the morning we got the yawl and fishing-boat ready to make some discoveries relative to the depth of the bay, which appeared to us to be a large river when we saw it from the heights the evening before.

Mess. de Bougainville, de Belcourt, de St. Simon, l'Huillier, and Alexander Guyot, embarked in the yawl, well armed, and furnished with provisions for four or five days, and a tent to use on the shore. The sailors too were armed with muskets, cutlasses and bayonets. Their design was to proceed to the northern part, and to find out whether it was covered with wood. Mess. Donat and Arcouet, in the fishing-boat, were to make discoveries on the southern part, an idea having been entertained that the bottom of the bay was divided into two branches which lost themselves in the vallies.

Mess. Alexander Guyot and Arcouet returned on board the same evening in the yawl, having left M. Donat with the fishing-boat to join M. de Bougainville and his associates. M. Guyot brought some bustards, three young sea-wolves with hair of a brownish grey, and five sea-lionesses. They were about seven feet long, and three and a half in circumference, though their intestines were drawn. These gentlemen had landed on a small island, where they found a prodigious number of these animals, and killed eight or nine hundred of them with sticks. No other weapon is necessary on these occasions. A single blow with a bludgeon, three feet or three feet and a half long, aimed full at the nose of these animals, knocks them down, and kills them on the spot.

This is not altogether the case with the sea-lions: their size is prodigious. Our gentlemen encountered two of them for a long time, with the same weapons, without being able to overcome them. They lodged three balls in the throat of one while he opened his mouth to defend himself, and three musket shot in his body. The blood gushed from the wounds like wine from

from a tap. However he crawled into the water and disappeared. A sailor attacked the other, and engaged him for a long time, striking him on the head with a bludgeon, without being able to knock him down: the sailor fell down very near his antagonist, but had the dexterity to recover himself at the instant the lion was going to gorge him. Had he once seized him, the man would infallibly have been lost: the animal would have carried him into the water as they usually do their prey, and there feasted upon him. In his retreat to the sea this animal seized a penguin and devoured him instantaneously.

There are several kinds of sea wolves and lions; all which I have seen. The former, when at their full size, are from ten to twenty feet in length, and upwards; and from eight to fifteen in circumference. Their skin is covered with hair of a clear tan colour, or fallow like a hind's, and as short as that of a cow. The head is shaped like a mastiff's, supposing the lips of the upper jaw were divided under the nose like those of a lion of the forest, and were not pendulous; and that the ears were cropped close to the head. I shall describe them more fully afterwards.

The other species, which is not so large, has the same appearance; the snout is rather rounder and shorter. Instead of fore paws, it has two fins consisting of articulations, covered, as with a glove without fingers, with a very hard skin or membrane of a dark grey colour. These articulations are not distinguishable on the outside, and can only be discovered by dissecting the fin. The two hinder feet have visible articulations like the fingers of the hand, five in number, and of unequal length. These fingers from the first to the third articulation are joined by the membrane: which afterwards divides itself, and runs along the side of each finger, in the same manner as the membrane in the feet of a diver or water-fowl, and extends much beyond each finger. Its feet are situated almost at the extremity of the body; where they form a kind of split tail when they lie down or are not in motion. Each toe is armed with a claw  
which



which is not sharp, but rather projecting, and of a black colour. See the figure in the plate.

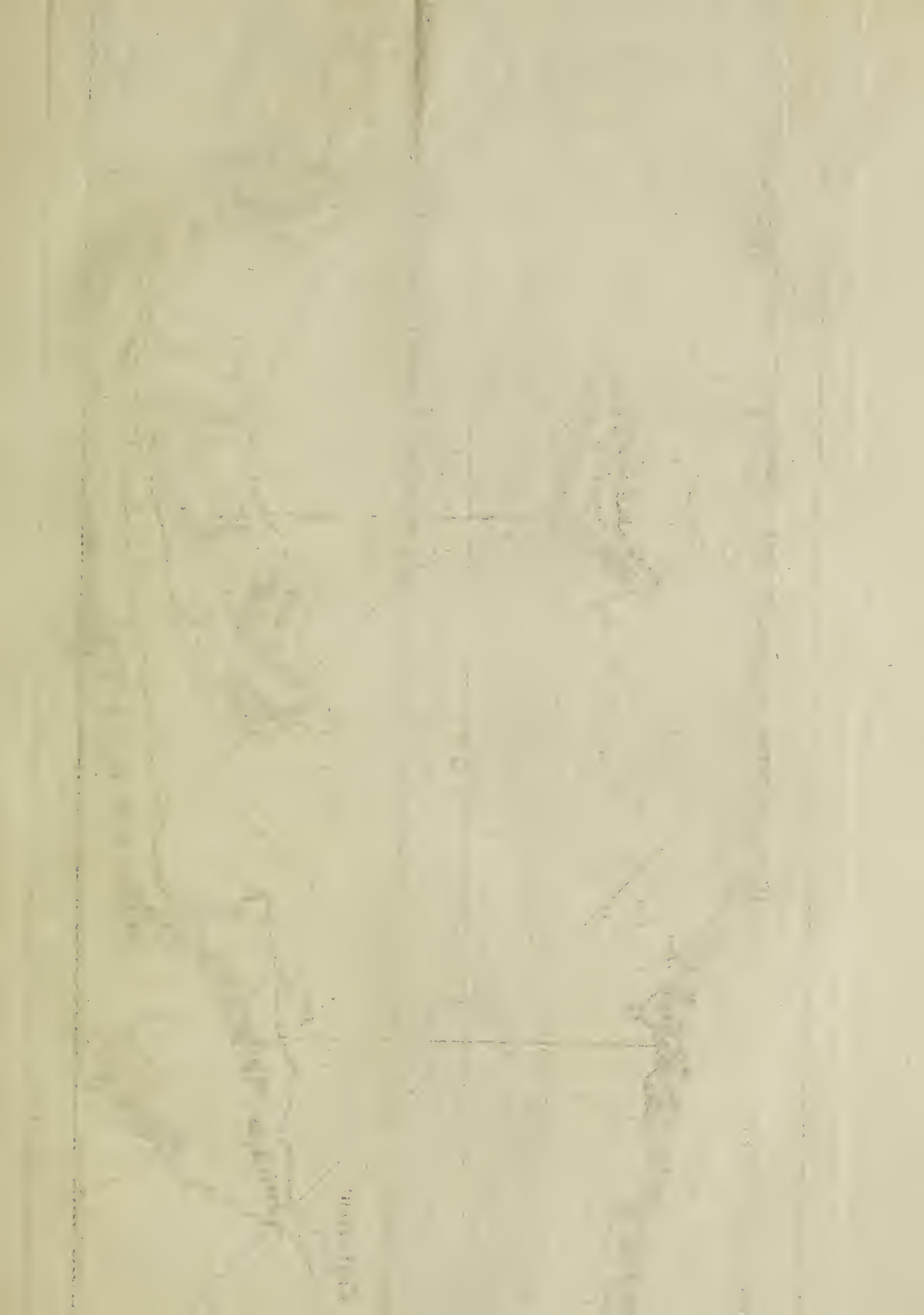
Both kinds are bearded like tigers, and have thick strait hairs directly over their eyes by way of eyebrows. The female appeared to have a longer and more graceful neck than the male; and had dugs.

In these animals the fat, which is white and flabby, is so redundant, that it is several inches thick between the skin and the flesh. They are full of blood, which, when they are deeply wounded, gushes out with as much force as when you open a vein in a fat person.

The animal which Mess. Donat and le Roy saw when they went on shore for greens, was probably a sea-lion, of which I shall speak afterwards; though they described it with hanging ears, as long in proportion as those of a spaniel.

Such is the form and figure of the sea-wolves which we saw in some little islands in the bay where we anchored. Those whose description and shape admiral Anson has given are sea-wolves of the larger kind. He calls them sea-lions improperly for the reason hereafter assigned. See the plate.

These animals are all amphibious, and most commonly pass the night and part of the day on shore. When you pierce the thickets of corn-flags, in which they make their retreats and where they form a kind of apartment, you almost always find them lying asleep on the dry leaves of those plants. When they are in the water, they every now and then raise their head and part of their neck above the surface, and remain some time in this position, as if attentive to what is going forward. They make a noise much resembling the roaring of a lion: the young ones seem to utter a hollow sound, sometimes bleating like sheep, sometimes lowing like calves. The larger and the smaller kinds move heavily, and seem rather to drag themselves along than to walk, but with as much expedition as their bulk will allow. They live upon grass, fish, and other animals when they come in their way. On the little island where our gentlemen killed  
so





# A VIEW of FORT ST. LOUIS at ACARRON BAY.



## PLAN of ACARRON BAY Situated at the Foot Point of the Malouine Islands.

Latitude 52.40 South  
Longitude 60.40 West of Paris  
Variation 23.30 N.E. 1764





so many of these animals, one of the females seized a penguin at the instant it fell by a musket-shot. The sea she-wolf carried it into the water, and devoured it so entirely in a moment that nothing remained but a slip of skin floating on the surface. M. le Roy had, the day before, brought one of these penguins on board, which was at least two feet and a half high. We shall give the description and representation of this hereafter.

On the same day, while some of the company were employed in shooting, M. Duclos our captain and M. Chenard de la Gyraudais went to the top of a kind of hill toward the South, where they planted a cross of wood about three feet high on the summit between two rocks, and called this eminence the *mountain of the cross*.

On Sunday morning, the 5th instant, the weather being pretty fine, with a tolerable breeze, the longboat was sent on shore, to get hay and water, which we did conveniently on the southern coast, to the S. S. W. of the ship, where there seemed to be a kind of fountain. These people returned on board with our sportsmen, who brought a quantity of game of the same kinds as before mentioned.

About noon, M. de Bougainville and his associates returned from their excursion, much disappointed in their hopes of finding wood. They set fire to the herbage of an island, which they have since called the *Burnt Island*, and to a promontory of the continent. They brought with them ten young penguins.

A large piece of wood which M. Duclos found on the beach gave us fresh hopes of finding some on the island. Among several others, the journals of Wood Rogers describe the face of the country in the Malouine Islands, as consisting of mountains and hills covered with woods. As we had not hitherto discovered any in the places we had visited, we concluded that they had only viewed it at a distance, and had, like ourselves, been deceived by appearances. The difficulty however of accounting how this piece of wood should be found on the shore, unless it was



was produced on some coasts of these islands, inclined us to suspend our opinions till we had made some farther discoveries.

The island which M. de Bougainville set on fire, was at first called Penguin island, because these birds were found there in such numbers, that upwards of two hundred perished in the flames. There remained however a prodigious quantity; and we found some of them at every step. The setting of this island on fire, which is near a full league in length, and half a league in breadth, may be said to be of no consequence, as the flames could not extend farther: but the same cannot be affirmed of the continent. M. de Bougainville imagined, that by destroying this useless herbage he was doing a piece of service, as it would save trouble whenever these lands were cleared. I represented to him, that as the whole country was covered with the same herbage, the flames might probably spread over the whole face of the continent, unless their progress was stopt by some rivers; besides, that they would destroy the game. He paid no regard to my remonstrances; and set fire that very evening to several parts of the continent.

On the 6th of February in the morning, M. de Bougainville, on the credit of the journal of a Malouine captain, asserting that he had seen wood in the eastern part of this island, determined to pursue his discoveries. As soon as we had put to sea with our cutter and longboat, the wind began to blow with some violence from the W. S. W. which determined us to postpone our expedition; especially as M. de la Gyraudais proposed to dispatch M. de St. Simon, with three or four other officers belonging to his vessel, to make discoveries by land; which was agreed to.

M. de St. Simon, a lieutenant of foot, who had lived many years with the savages of Canada, young, hardy and enterprising, and in every respect qualified for an expedition of this nature, set out this very evening with Mess. Donat, officers of the Sphinx, and two seamen, to reconnoitre the N. N. W. part of this island.

The

The longboat of the Sphinx having likewise landed some of its crew, they found on the shore a bough of a dry tree fifteen or sixteen feet in length, which confirmed us in our expectation of finding wood upon the island.

On Tuesday morning the 7th instant, the weather becoming clear, we hoisted the anchor which had been cast the evening before on account of the hard wind which had then arisen. We sent to get in some ballast and some water, and our sportsmen came back about noon laden with game.

M. de la Gyraudais dined on board the Eagle, and a seaman brought a pretty large dry root which he found on the northern coast. It seemed to be a species of the cedar.

All these specimens of wood determined us to make an accurate search on the South West coast. With this view M. de Bougainville, M. de Belcourt, and the Sieur Donat la Garde, lieutenant of our ship, embarked in the boat. They took in provisions for three weeks, and being all well armed, directed their course to the South East.

On the 8th, the sons of M. Duclos Guyot our captain, happening to throw some hooks at the stern out of the windows of the cabin, caught a large quantity of fish of a most delicate flavour, though not more than eight or nine inches long. Their eyes were red, their gills edged with gold, and their fins of the same colour; their skin smooth as that of a tench. I do not know their name.

On Thursday the 9th, at four in the morning, the wind being northerly, we got every thing in readiness to penetrate farther into the bay. When we were under sail the wind shifted to the North West, which obliged us to make several tacks, founding all the while. We constantly found between twelve and fifteen fathom, the bottom of muddy sand: at eight, the wind veering to the West and blowing fresh, we anchored in a green, smooth, slimy bottom, at fifteen fathom.

On the 10th, the wind continued to blow fresh from N. to N. W. the weather was hazy, with showers of rain and hail.



We sent out our longboat however to the peninsula on the N. W. of us, to see whether we could find pasture for our cattle. Here we killed a great deal of game. I saw many sea-wolves of the lesser kind, with a smooth skin of a dark brown. They had five claws on their fore fins which served instead of feet, but were not divided into distinct toes. On our return we proposed to send our cattle on shore, not only for the sake of recovering them from the very feeble state to which the tossing of the vessel had reduced them, but to free ourselves from the necessity of employing a boat and men every day to procure fodder for them.

On the 11th, the wind blew too violently all the day W. S. W. to permit us to execute our design. At six in the evening, the yawl belonging to the Sphinx came on board, to inform us, that their longboat had just then brought back to their vessel, M. de St. Simon and the rest of his companions; who acquainted us afterwards, that on their return they were three days on the shore opposite to us; and had fired several times to give us notice. We heard no firing, or at least none but what we thought proceeded from our shooting parties, which sometimes returned very late; though always loaded with as many bustards, teals, ducks, snipes, curlews, &c. as they could carry.

The gentlemen of the Sphinx farther added, that the supposed trees which we thought we discovered on a small island when we passed near the verge of the current, were nothing more than a plant of the bullrush kind, with flat leaves, known to our seamen by the name of *glajeux*: that the hillocks formed by their roots afforded a retreat for the sea-wolves, three of which they killed as big and long as our boat, besides several others. They likewise killed a kind of wild dog, much resembling a fox of the larger size: some of the company imagined it was a grey lynx. M. Martin, lieutenant of the Sphinx, had killed two of them the same day.

These gentlemen met with no tree; but discovered a large and fine bay some leagues distant from that in which we anchored.

On

On Sunday the 12th, I said mass at five in the morning, for the quicker dispatch of the longboat intended for forage. M. l'Huillier went in the yawl to draw a plan of the bay where we anchored, and several others set out with him on a shooting party.

The wind being W. S. W. and the weather fine, the Sphinx's longboat put to sea on Monday the 13th, with three men to make oil of the fat of the sea-wolves, which had been killed on a small island some days before. These animals may with equal propriety be called porpoises; since, besides their having fat or bacon several inches thick between their skin and their flesh, they often grunt like hogs, and wallow in the same manner in the dirt and mire, where I have seen twenty of them lying down, particularly of the species described by the author of admiral Anson's voyage, under the denomination of lions.

At the same time our small boat was dispatched to another neighbouring island in search of penguins, which are as numerous as the ants in an ant-hill. Some hours after, it returned loaded with a hundred and sixty of these birds without wings, some of which we salted. At seven in the morning we discovered our fishing-boat, at the southern point of the entrance into the bay. We immediately hoisted our colours, and the Sphinx followed our example.

At noon, the Sphinx's longboat brought on board our vessel the Sieur Donat la Garde, and M. de Bougainville's servant, who we thought were still in the fishing-boat in which they embarked. The Sieur Donat informed us, that M. de Bougainville and M. de Belcourt, had been ever since yesterday afternoon on the southern coast of the continent which encompasses the bay. We immediately sent out our longboat, in which M. de Nerville, M. l'Huillier, and myself embarked, in quest of them. We found them exceedingly harassed and fatigued, with the expedition they had just made on foot, through a country where there was no beaten track. We reconducted them on board, together with a seaman who had accompanied them. Being



pressed with hunger, they as it were devoured the dinner we prepared for them, which however did not prevent them from playing their part well at supper, though it was served up soon after.

They informed us, that they had traversed the south-east coast, till they came to as fine a bay as that we now anchored in, about eight leagues distant by sea, and about four by land. Here they quitted their boat, and went by land to the south-west part of the island, and particularly observed that the coast ran W. N. W. which is not probable. For there is great reason to believe that our vessel was then stationed on the eastern point of the island, the point taken notice of by sailors in their journals; who, as well as others, were certainly deceived themselves when they reported their having seen some large fine trees growing upon very beautiful hills. M. de Bougainville told us, that in the bay where the boat was left, he found upon the shore three trees which were very dry, and one of them almost as large as a wine hog-head. As they met with none in all the parts of the country they had traversed, there is reason to believe that these trees had been transported thither from the Terra del Fuego, or from the neighbourhood, by the waves and currents which run towards the East, the wind too usually blowing from the S. W. and W. M. de Belcourt, M. de Bougainville's servant, and a seaman, were attacked, if it may be called so, by a wild dog of the species I have before mentioned. This is perhaps the only animal that is savage of the quadruped kind in the Malouine Islands: it is probable too, that it may not have been fierce, and that it only approached them out of curiosity because it had never seen any of the human species. The birds did not avoid us, but flocked about us as if they were familiar and tame. We have not hitherto seen any kind of reptiles, nor any venomous animal.

The whole night of the fifteenth was rainy, and very tempestuous. At half past eleven, the thunder fell at two cables length from us, and knocked down Le Sieur Guyot our second captain, who commanded the quarter deck. He received no inconvenience from this accident, except being frightened.

Our

Our longboat, which had been sent out since the morning to carry provisions to those who were employed in washing the crews linen, could not return, on account of a contrary wind which arose, and blew with violence from the S. S. W.

On the 16th, about six in the morning, the wind fell, and the weather became hazy. Some squalls came on afterwards, accompanied with rain and hail. The fishing-boat was however sent out to get forage. Our longboat returned about nine o'clock, and the other at three in the afternoon.

On Friday the 17th, at five in the morning, the wind blowing fresh from the South South-East, Messrs. de Bougainville, de Nerville, de Belcourt, Donat, de la Garde and myself, embarked in the cutter, with a tent and bedding, to establish a settlement on the land, and to form a camp on a small eminence almost at the bottom of the bay.

As soon as we landed, we set about pitching our tent on a spot which we judged to be the most commodious, at the distance of a musket shot from the sea. The little hill ran from East to West. The place where we fixed our establishment is open to the North, which makes the South of the country with respect to the equator. Below us, at about a pistol shot from the tent, ran a rivulet of sweet water very palatable to drink. In the front of the tent was a small eminence like that on the declivity of which the tent was pitched. Some paces from thence we dug a hole in the ground for a kitchen; where, for want of other fuel, we made use of broom. We likewise tried the large green tufts of the resinous gum-shrub I have mentioned. They keep up and continue a fire extremely well; but when green are not proper for dressing victuals.

As I saw the inconvenience attending the want of wood in a country where we intended to establish a colony, I endeavoured to hit upon some expedient to obviate it, at least till the government could take measures for dispatching some pinks and schooners to be stationed in this country, and to make voyages to the Terra del Fuego, to bring wood for fuel as well as for building



ing and carpenter's work. I thought we might possibly find some coal, or at least turf. Accordingly I equipped myself with a mattock, and proceeded on my search. Having observed, that the banks of the rivulet were rather marshy, I conceived, that, as the country had never been cultivated, the grass which grew there, might in process of time have formed a mass of earth intermixed with roots and decayed leaves, which would exactly furnish us with the sort of turf I was in quest of. In fact, after a few strokes with the mattock, I discovered a turf of a reddish cast, which was owing to its not being arrived at the maturity requisite to give it perfection. When I had gone twenty paces up the rivulet, and had found, on digging, some turf with the properties I wanted, I carried two or three squares of it to M. de Bougainville, and acquainted him with the discovery. He was so anxious lest it should not prove the right kind of turf, that he declared it his opinion that it was not. It was shewn to every body who landed with us, and those who were acquainted with turf, were of my opinion. M. de Bougainville still in suspense, wishing that it might be the true sort, and yet fearing the contrary, resolved to make a trial of it. Some dozen of these squares were dug up and ranged round the fire. Our impatience prompted us to throw a few into the fire, when we had the satisfaction to find, that as soon as the moisture of the turf was exhaled, it burnt as well as the best turf produced in France and other countries. We then sent three or four seamen to cut a quantity, and to pile it in the usual manner to dry, and be ready for any use we might think proper to make of it.

When some piles of this turf were raised, the *Sieur Donat* recollected that he had seen in company with M. l'Huillier along the coast, a black fibrous earth which was tolerably dry, and might answer the same purpose. But having forgot the place, Messrs. de Bougainville, de Nerville, l'Huillier and myself, went in search of it that day, but without success.

While we were thus engaged in forming our settlement, measures were taken on board to penetrate farther into the bay, with

a view both to be nearer us, and to provide for the security of our frigates.

Accordingly, as soon as we were gone, the two vessels set sail, and by proper manœuvres came at last to anchor immediately under Penguin's island, or the Burnt island, and within the narrow channel or entrance which one must pass to get into the creek, on the borders of which we had fixed our establishment. Near the place of anchorage there is a small island, which has since been called Cooper's island; our people having resorted thither to repair the casks belonging to the ship.

On Saturday the 17th, in the morning, we put into the great boat the two Acadian families we had brought with us to make a settlement on this island, and to people it. At nine in the morning they landed with all their clothes, furniture and necessary utensils, provisions, and some tents to accommodate such of the crew as were to remain on shore to assist in establishing the settlement.

Marks of the new anchorage. The northern point of the burnt island, which concealed the mouth of the bay from our sight, bore East North East, three degrees North. The center of the round island North East, three degrees East. The eastern point of the island abreast of us, N. N. E. five degrees East. The highest mountain at the bottom of the bay, South West, five degrees West. The Sphinx was anchored about a cable and a half length nearer the mouth of the bay, than our frigate.

Till this time eight of us, Messrs. de Bougainville, de Nerville, de Belcourt, l'Huillier, Donat, and myself, with two servants belonging to Messrs. de Bougainville and Nerville, had lain in one tent. We placed our mattresses upon hay and broom, to secure ourselves from the damp. Though we were very much crowded, eleven of us lay there on the night from the 18th to the 19th, our company being enlarged by the arrival of M. de St. Simon, Lieutenant of foot, Mr. Balé, second Surgeon, and a Pilot, who were not provided with a tent to sleep in.

On



On Sunday the 19th we landed a great quantity of provisions and tents, and every one disposed of himself as well as he could. We had notwithstanding no fewer than twelve in our tent on Sunday night. Finding ourselves so much crowded we resolved the next day to pitch some additional tents, and to separate from each other. I was the only person that remained with Messrs. de Bougainville and Nerville.

While some were employed in fixing the tents, others went a shooting, and returned laden with game of the several sorts I have described. M. de Bougainville, having in pursuit of game wandered a little way from his companions, discovered another creek, formed by the same bay, near three quarters of a league from our encampment. All along the banks of it he found a lamellated earth of a brown colour almost approaching to black, which was undoubtedly the same which Messrs. l'Huillier and Donat had seen some days before. M. de Bougainville having shewn me a piece he had brought from the place, I pronounced it excellent for the same purposes as turf. We made a trial of it, and it succeeded extremely well. Those who intended to stay on these islands, with a view of establishing a new colony, were transported with joy at the discovery, especially as this turf is at present dry and ready for burning, and as, according to M. de Bougainville's account, it is found in such abundance that the boats may be loaded with it every day and brought to the settlement.

Walking along the coast in the afternoon, I gathered several shells, *Patellæ*, *Cochleæ*, Magellanic muscles, &c. among the roots of that sea-grass, called by our seamen *Baudreu*, which had been lately thrown on shore from the bottom of the sea.

We this day landed the horses, calves, cows, sheep and hogs, which we had taken on board at Montevideo. They were all so harassed by fatigue and sickness that a mare and her foal died on the beach a few hours after they were set on shore.

On the 21st we were much afraid that we should not be able to save any of our horses, cows or sheep, considering their mi-

ferable and weak state when they were landed; as they all seemed to be either lame or languishing. We left them on shore to take their chance, and those which could not stand upon their feet, we dragged upon the grafs, which was at a little distance. Having sent some persons this morning to see whether they were dead or alive, they were surpris'd to find neither horses nor sheep, and the cows and calves dispers'd about the country. They were unable to conceive, that, considering their sickly state the evening before, they could in one night have acquired sufficient strength to run about the fields: and it was apprehended that they might be devoured by the sea-wolves, or some wild beasts unknown to us; but the carcasses of the mare and foal which still remained on the beach, removed this suspicion.

Since Sunday afternoon we were employed in chusing a proper place for building an apartment for the reception of the parties who were to remain on this island. The same eminence on which the tents were pitched was judged to be the most convenient. M. l'Huillier, Engineer and Geographer to the King, marked out the foundation, according to a plan he had communicated to Mess. de Bougainville and de Nerville. From the Monday morning every person on shore took the mattock or the spade to dig the foundation.

I had seen the first plan; several alterations in which having been made in consequence of my remonstrances, I thought myself equally at liberty to give my opinion on the choice of the ground. I observed that in heavy rains, or when the snow melted, the great quantity of water which would come down from the hill would overflow the building, and if it did not instantly demolish it, would at length effect its ruin by sapping the foundation; the declivity being rather steep in this place. M. l'Huillier propos'd to obviate this inconvenience by cutting a trench above to receive and carry off the water; but this did not appear to me a sufficient expedient, as the trench could not stop the impetuosity of the torrent; besides that the water which would be detained in it, by gradually oozing through the earth,



would cause a dampness in the apartments very prejudicial to the health of the inhabitants, their provisions and furniture. My opinion seemed at first to be disregarded : M. l'Huillier defended his own, and had already caused some lands to be cleared on the spot to which he gave the preference. But on mature deliberation he fixed upon another situation on the same hill, at a musket-shot distance, where there was a very gentle declivity. The workmen were immediately set to dig the foundations. The sailors belonging to the two frigates were employed in this service ; M. de Bougainville paying them for their day's work, exclusive of their seamen's wages.

On Wednesday the 22d there were only ten men left on board the Eagle ; all the rest were employed in the building.

On the 23d some provisions and utensils were brought on shore from the vessel ; and our sportsmen furnished an ample supply for the subsistence of both the ships companies.

M. de St. Simon, one of the keenest of our sportsmen, meeting with a sea-wolf larger than any we had yet seen, near the creek where we discovered the turf, killed it instantly by a lucky shot. On his return he related his adventure at supper, assuring us that this sea-wolf was so thick and long that our boat could not contain it. Every body thought the account exaggerated. But from the description he gave of its figure, I began to think that it might probably be of the species mentioned in Admiral Anson's voyage by the name of *sea-lions*.

Full of this idea, and being curious to know the truth of the matter, I determined to go to the place the next day, being the 24th, with M. de St. Simon and two others.

When we came within something more than a thousand yards distance of this animal, it appeared like a small hill, rising from the level of the ground where it lay. M. de St. Simon added to the deception of our sight, by pointing out this pretended hill, telling us that the animal lay dead near it ; so that we did not observe the sea-wolf till we were near enough to see it distinctly. On measuring we found it nineteen feet and some inches long.

We could not at that time measure its bulk, being unable to raise or turn it in order to pass a cord round it.

After we had thoroughly examined it, M. de St. Simon led us to the borders of another creek, thirty paces from this spot, where there was a great quantity of cornflags. On coming to the place, he fired at a sea-wolf, no bigger than a very large calf, and killed it. We immediately heard on all sides, from among these cornflags, cries resembling the grunting of hogs, the bellowing of bulls, the roaring of lions, succeeded by a sound like the blowing of the largest pipes of an organ. We could not help being rather alarmed; but recollecting immediately that these different cries must proceed from these animals, and knowing that we might approach them without danger, taking care only to keep off about the distance of their length; we entered among these cornflags. M. de St. Simon fired at a sea-wolf which was nearest to him. The shot entered an inch above his eye, the animal fell under the stroke, and died almost instantly. A fountain of blood issued from the orifice, and spouted to the distance of at least half a foot. More than thirty pints ran out in less than half a quarter of an hour.

Thirty of these large sea-wolves were lying two and sometimes three in the same hole or pit, full of mud and dirt, where they wallowed like hogs. M. de St. Simon singled out such as lay on dry ground, as it was more easy to remove them when dead, and less troublesome to skin them, in order to get their grease or lard for making oil. He killed eleven of them successively. Two others, rather larger than the rest, being only wounded, though they had already lost twenty pints of blood, had strength enough left to get out of their holes, and escaped to sea, where we soon lost sight of them. The rest which were not wounded remained quietly in their retreats, without shewing any signs of fear or rage. Only one of those which were mortally wounded, in his last struggles seized some of the cornflags that surrounded him, tore them in pieces with his teeth, and



scattered them about; but without bellowing or making any noise.

An Acadian who accompanied us skinned a young sea-wolf, the first that was killed, as well as two other small ones which were killed after the largest. These are of the same species with that which we took for a hillock. They are exactly the same monstrous animals, as are described by the author of admiral Anson's voyage, under the article of the island of Juan Fernandes, situated at a small distance from the continent of Chili. The whole of his relation is pretty near the truth, except that in these sea-wolves, which he calls *lions*, the two feet are furnished with toes having distinct articulations, but connected by a membrane or black pellicle, and that these toes are armed with claws; a circumstance wanting in the figure inserted in the 100th page of that admiral's voyage.

The least of these large sea-wolves which were killed by M. de St. Simon, was from fifteen to sixteen feet in length.

When they see any one approach them, they usually raise themselves upon their paws or fins as described in the plate. They open their mouth wide enough to admit easily a ball of a foot diameter; and keep it open in this manner, at the same time filling a kind of trunk they have upon their nostrils with wind. This trunk is formed by the skin of the nose itself; which subsides and remains empty when they cease to bellow, or do not fill it with their breath. Their head is shaped like that of a she-lion without ears.

Among the numbers that were killed, I observed several which had no trunk, the skin of their nose had no wrinkles, and their snout ended rather in a sharper point. Perhaps these were the females. All those we skinned were males: but six were left lying upon their bellies in the mire without being turned; and these were just the number we saw without trunks. If these were really the females, there should be much less difference in size between them and the males than is represented by the author

thor of the voyage just now quoted; for the difference is not even apparent.

While these animals kept their mouths open, two young people diverted themselves with throwing large stones into them, which they swallowed as we would a strawberry. They move their bodies with some difficulty, but can turn their head and neck to the right or left with tolerable agility considering their bulk. It would be dangerous to come within their reach; as they could bite a man in two with a single bite. They have the finest eyes imaginable, and there is no fierceness in their countenance: I remarked that when they were expiring their eyes changed colour, and their crystalline lens became of an admirable green. Some of these animals were white, others tawny; the major part of the colour of the beaver, and some of a light fawn colour.

On Saturday the 25th, M. de Bougainville proposed at breakfast to both land and sea officers, to undertake the erecting of a fort upon the rising ground forming the hill, on which the habitation or place of residence was built for the colonists, who were to remain on the island. We all unanimously agreed to erect it with our own hands, and to complete it without the assistance of the rest of the ship's company.

As soon as breakfast was over, M. l'Huillier and M. de Bougainville went to choose the ground, and M. l'Huillier assisted by two pilots marked it out upon the spot.

In the mean time some persons were dispatched in search of tools for the execution of our design; others went a shooting to procure provisions for the company. We had hitherto killed more game than was sufficient for the subsistence of the crews belonging to the two frigates. We had more than once considered it as a singular circumstance that we should come with an intent to form a settlement in a desert and unknown country, having no other provision than bread, wine, and brandy; and yet free from any care for the next day, in full confidence that the game we met with would furnish a sufficient subsistence for  
above



above a hundred and twenty persons, who had landed and were encamped under the tent. So far from experiencing any want hitherto, we had made so plentiful a provision, that there was no probability of our being reduced during the stay we proposed to make. Nevertheless each mess, consisting of seven persons, was allowed one bustard and a goose, or one goose and two ducks, or two geese, or two bustards and some diving water-fowl, which we call *Becsics*, or *Nigauts*, and which I shall speak of in the sequel.

About three in the afternoon, we met at the place where the fort was marked out, which we agreed to call *Fort du Roy*, or Fort Royal. Every body set to work with so much cheerfulness, and such incredible ardor, that we had the very same evening dug part of the ditch six feet broad and one deep. M. de Bougainville's example animated us all.

On Sunday the 26th, both the ships companies assembled at the habitation to hear mass. There remained on board the Eagle only three men and two officers, one of whom had received a hurt in his leg. They all dined on shore, and the boat did not return to the ship till evening, when the wind which had all day blown with some violence, was abated.

On Monday and Tuesday, the longboats took in ballast for the Sphinx. Some poultry, beams, planks, &c. were carried on shore. The works were continued at the building and the fort. In my walks, I now and then took notice of the soil of the adjacent country. I found a pretty large quantity of spar and quartz; which is an indication of mines. I likewise met with some earth of a reddish cast, resembling oker, and some stones of a rusty colour and very ferrugineous, which I shewed to M. de Bougainville.

I am persuaded that there are mines of different ores in this island: I broke a piece of spar mixed with quartz with an iron crow; and perceived in the crevices a greenish substance which appeared to me like verdigrease. On touching it with my tongue  
the

the taste and styptic quality of this mineral was so strong, that it made me spit for a full quarter of an hour.

On Thursday the first of March the weather which was hazy, with squalls of wind and some rain, retarded our works; but we got ballast for the two frigates. M. de Bougainville came to a resolution that the Sphinx on her return home should touch at Guadeloupe, to dispose of some of the merchandize we had on board; and that our frigate, after we had made some farther discoveries of the land, should return to France, instead of going to the island Mauritius, which was intended if the Malouine Islands had not been fit for establishing a commodious and advantageous settlement.

On the second of March, at nine in the morning, we landed four pieces of cannon out of the ten which the Eagle was to furnish for the defence of the fort we were erecting. Four more will be added from on board the Sphinx; two brass field pieces, which were bought at St. Malo's two days before our departure, and six pedereroes.

As we had determined to raise a pyramid in form of an obelisk in the center of the fort, I proposed to place a bust of Lewis the fifteenth upon the top, and undertook to execute it in terra cotta. I had seen some grey-coloured earth on the banks of a creek, which I thought very fit for this purpose. At ten o'clock I set out with our captain M. Duclos, to search for it, and to observe what progress was made in extracting oil from the grease or lard of the large sea-wolves, which we had killed several days ago, and left upon the spot. We went thither in the fishing-boat.

Though they had been killed so long and were exposed to the heat of the sun, which had melted a great part of the fat, the people employed in extracting this oil, assured us, that every sea-wolf yielded at least two hogheads and a half, and would have afforded more than four, if the experiment had been made sooner.

I wanted



I wanted to get the two largest teeth drawn from the jaw, but it was not practicable. In breaking the jaw-bone with a hatchet, the stroke unfortunately fell upon the teeth so as to split them. They are solid and full only towards the point: the whole of what is inserted into the jaw-bone being hollow. I at first intended to have dissected the whole head, but the enormous size of it obliged me to relinquish my design, on account of the difficulty attending the carriage.

I employed the remainder of the time in seeking shells among the sea-weeds, lately thrown on shore by the waves. There were scarce any other than some *Neritæ*, with stripes of different colours.

The bottom of the shell is composed of the finest mother of pearl. I likewise met with some cochleæ and Magellanic, as well as common muscles. Some of the last were between five and six inches long and two broad, at their greatest diameter. At six in the evening we loaded the fishing-boat with the potter's earth and turf. Finding that it was aground, owing to its being overloaded, we lightened it to set it afloat. We were deceived by the ebb; because the sea, which is not very regular in these bays, except at the time of the new or full moon, did not rise so high as we expected. It was near an hour before the boat could be set afloat; and that it might not be overloaded, M. Duclos and myself determined to return by land, and to keep along the coast. We marched almost a league over flints, stones, and rocks, which line this coast. The boatmen had orders to come to take us in at the entrance of the bay, where we told them we should wait for them. We reached the place with great difficulty, the weather being hazy and the wind very high. Having waited for them three quarters of an hour in vain, and while it was very dark, we concluded that the tide, which was running down, and the high wind, which was contrary, had induced the boatmen to bear away for the vessels. We resolved therefore to finish our expedition by land, by going round the bay, which is at least three quarters of a league, when

we heard the boat coming towards us. We hailed her and she answered. After attempting in vain to put ashore at two or three places, they came near enough at last to give us a fair opportunity of jumping into the boat. We intended only to cross over to the other side of the mouth of the creek, and to perform the rest of our journey along the shore on foot. But the steersman assuring us that the sea still rose, and that the tide was in our favour; persuaded us that we should easily get the better of the contrary wind, and that they would engage to land us in a short time near our habitation. Our captain suffered himself to be prevailed upon, and we got into the mouth of the bay; but we had scarce rowed ten or twelve yards when the wind blew with excessive violence, the waves ran high, and the ebb of the sea joined to a contrary wind was so troublesome, that we could not get the better of it. Notwithstanding all our efforts we could scarce proceed twenty yards. The sea grew terrible; every wave broke with violence against the boat, and partly beat into it, so that we were already overflowed. Tired with struggling in vain against the waves, and finding ourselves in danger of running aground upon the stones which lay along the coast, to which the waves and the wind drove us in spite of all our efforts, M. Duclos said we must return to the mouth of the bay, and there run aground. In less than three minutes, in spite of the oars and rudder, we found ourselves driven towards the shore at the distance of about four fathoms from land. The sea which was then extremely furious, was near dashing the boat in pieces, and we ourselves were in danger. Our captain told us we must jump into the water, and set the example himself. I followed him at the instant that a large wave was just breaking against the boat, and overwhelmed it entirely: the shock it gave made me fall into the water when I was just coming to the ground. I recovered myself so soon, that I only got wet on my left side, and had my boots filled with water. It was scarce more than two feet deep. I immediately steered my course towards our habitation, and told M. Duclos our captain,



that I was going to give tidings of him, while he was engaged in getting the boat afloat in order to secure it. When I arrived at the habitation, I found several of our company, who were under apprehensions on our account. Finding the weather so bad, some of them imagined that we had put ourselves on board one of the frigates, to avoid the danger of struggling against the wind and angry waves in a boat: others fancied that the darkness had compelled us to land, and that we might have lost our way. It was near ten, and they still waited supper for us. While I changed my clothes, the supper was served up, and I played my part at it handsomely. M. Duclos arrived half an hour after me, and went to-bed without taking any other refreshment than a glass of wine.

We imagined till now, that the creeks and the bay which formed the port of our habitation, were not well stocked with fish: that the sea-wolves and the water-fowl, which were very numerous, destroyed the fish for food, and allowed it no time to grow large. M. de la Gyraudais yesterday convinced us of the contrary, by bringing us some fish which made part of our supper. Being a shooting at the extremity of a creek about a league from our encampment, he came to the mouth of a small river when the sea was at ebb; where, as he told us, he caught with his hands a dozen fish, which were left aground upon the gravel, and were endeavouring to get back to sea. The smallest of them was about a foot long. They were some of them drest *au courbouillon*, others fried. Every body found them excellent.

On Friday morning Mess. Duclos, de la Gyraudais, Baslé, M. Duclos's youngest son, and myself, being desirous of making the most of this discovery, without communicating our design to the rest, got ready a net of the size of only three fathoms and a half, and repaired to the fishing place. We placed two catch nets at the same place, when the sea ebbed, and caught thirty fish and upwards, the least of which weighed near a pound and

a half. We afterwards cast a third net at the mouth of a small river two hundred paces from thence, and caught a dozen of the same sort of fish.

Encouraged by this success, on Saturday the third instant we returned to our fishing. But the sea having ebbed, we did not catch a single fish. We then concluded that this fish came into fresh water with the tide, and went back again with the ebb. Having observed that numbers escaped through the holes of our net which was a bad one, or jumped over it, we determined to go a fishing with the seamen the next day, when the high tide occasioned by the new moon was expected. Accordingly M. Duclos went on board, and ordered the sean to be got ready. M. le Roy carried it in the boat to the entrance of the creek in the morning, and came to acquaint us with it. A party of us, to the number of sixteen, set out immediately after dinner, with Messrs. de Bougainville and de Nerville at our head. On casting the sean only once, we took more than five hundred large fishes, and thousands of others half a foot long; three-fourths of which we threw into the sea. We kept but one sort of the small ones called by the Spaniards *Pajes*, and by our mariners *Gras dos*. This fish is almost transparent and of a most exquisite delicacy. It is excellent when fried, and not inferior to the eel pout.

The net was so full, that notwithstanding the joint efforts of sixteen persons, it was with the utmost difficulty imaginable that we dragged it on shore. Several fish jumped over it, and a great number escaped both at the extremities, which could not be brought together, and through the holes that were in the net. However we loaded the boat, which could not reach our encampment till the next day. The fish were distributed in great plenty for two days, among the crews belonging to the two frigates: they were eaten with variety of dressing; and that the rest might not be wasted, we salted a barrel full of them.

This fish resembles in shape what is called *Meuille* in Saint-onge. It weighs four pounds and an half upon an average.



The same day, just as supper was over, M. Martin lieutenant of the Sphinx came loaded with game. While he was a shooting, he went to discover the source of the river at the mouth of which we had caught so much fish. He informed us, that there was a vast bay, three or four leagues north-west of our encampment, of which he was not able to discover either the entrance or the bottom from any of the heights; that this bay appeared to him to run at least eight or ten leagues within the land, and that at different distances he saw rivers and islands. We were charmed with this discovery, and resolved to pay attention to it.

The great quantity of fish we had caught induced us to make a second trial. On Monday the 5th, we returned to the place, but whether the fish had taken the alarm, or the sea was not risen to a proper height, we caught only some small fishes and a dozen large ones.

While we were engaged in fishing, others went a shooting, and took a survey of the newly discovered bay. As they were doubtless less fatigued than M. Martin, they found the journey not so long, and declared it shorter by two leagues. This determined M. de Bougainville and several others to go thither the Wednesday following, being Ash-Wednesday.

The whole company being returned about noon, and the fort, on which the officers alone had been employed, being finished, M. de Bougainville proposed to mount the cannon which were upon their sea-carriages at the bottom of the hill. We immediately set about this business. Accordingly we laid planks upon the ground, to make what is called a bridge, to prevent the wheels of the carriages from sinking into the earth. By the mere strength of our hands, without the assistance of any instruments or engines except crows, levers and ropes, we managed to mount one cannon, notwithstanding the height and steep ascent of the hill. When we had planted it in its proper place, it being almost time to conclude our day's work, we loaded and fired this cannon by way of signal. We then cried seven times *Vive le Roi!* which

which exclamation was repeated by the workmen employed in building the apartments.

Ever since we set about building our habitation, we fired a field-piece with a pound ball, and rang a bell at five every morning, and half past seven every evening, to summon the men to their work, and give them notice when to leave off. At eight we rang to breakfast, and at one to dinner. Besides these meals M. de Bougainville now and then ordered them an allowance of brandy by way of gratuity. Thus the work was actually in as great forwardness as if two hundred workmen had been employed.

While we were thus busy on shore, the few hands which were on board the frigates were by no means idle. They landed something every day for the use of the encampment, as ordnance, balls, provisions, utensils, &c.

On the 6th we began to stow our ballast of flints, and in the course of the afternoon mounted seven cannon in the same manner as the first. It must be confessed, that seamen may challenge all the world in point of dexterity in moving great weights.

When this operation was finished, I ordered some baskets to be filled with potter's clay mixed with argil for want of sand proper for the purpose, and contrived so as to go on board the next day, that I might work at the King's bust without interruption, which I found to be impracticable on shore, where I should have been obliged to do it in our tent, into which somebody was entering every quarter of an hour.

On Shrove Tuesday, at seven in the morning, I got into the boat in order to return on board the Eagle. I took up my quarters again in my cabin; after dinner, I began to model the bust in M. de Bougainville's, and being unprovided with a piece of iron to support the earth upon the die, I supplied its place with a cylinder of wood. The head was already roughly sketched the same evening.



I dedicated the 8th wholly to the finishing of the first sketch, which was already reduced to a form. Two or three officers who saw it in this state, encouraged me to finish the bust, and I was in hopes of succeeding in my attempt.

Animated with this expectation, I went to work at six in the morning on the 9th, and was not a little disconcerted to see crevices and cracks in the forehead and several other places, though the earth was very well mixed. M. Guyot and M. Baslé coming a quarter of an hour after, were almost as much chagrined as myself, to find that the earth was not proper for the use I designed to make of it.

I asked M. Guyot, if he had not seen on the coast a fine sand, which when mixed with this earth might remedy its defects. They set out for the encampment an hour after, and gave M. de Bougainville an account of the difficulties I met with from the bad quality of this earth.

I thought I had nothing to do but to make another attempt with fresh earth mixed with sand, but M. de Bougainville, apprehensive that a new trial might prove abortive, determined to substitute a Flower de Luce in the room of this bust. M. Guyot returned on board to dinner, and communicated this resolution to me. I then desisted from my undertaking; and passed the evening upon the Burnt island in company with M. Mauclair, where we killed ten bustards: he had killed sixteen the day before. While we were in quest of game, two of our officers amused themselves with fishing with the hook from the cabin windows, and caught fish enough to furnish a dish for three successive meals. The angle-rod would supply an equal quantity every day, if the line was but thrown one hour before the meal.

These fish are of three kinds. The first resembles a pike in shape, the flesh as it were transparent, with a stripe of blue, one line in width, which runs from the gills to the tail between two yellow stripes. The Spaniards of Chili call them *Revalos*. The second species may be ranked in the class of the eel pouts, called by some *Loaches*. The head of that here mentioned is flat and much  
larger

larger than the eel pouts in France. The third species is likewise exquisite, and has yellow stripes round the gills, as if orpiment or gum had been rubbed upon it with a pencil.

These three sorts of fish, which were the only ones we caught on board, are no more than between nine and ten inches long; they are usually from six to seven. But all of them are excellent, particularly that which has the head, and nearly the figure of a pike. They bite so freely, that they are caught as soon as you throw out your line. This fish was one resource, when the weather did not permit us to go a shooting.

On the 10th I returned to the Burnt island, in hopes of gathering some *Lépas* or *Patellæ*, but the sea was too high; M. Duclos's youngest son and myself, after killing four wild ducks and three *Becfics*, returned on board at five o'clock.

The wild gander is of a dazzling white; its bill is short and black like a bustard's, and its feet are yellow. The bill and feet of the female resemble those of the male, but the feathers upon its back are grey. The border of the white feathers which cover the neck and breast is black, and forms a spot which takes the round shape of the feather. The wings of both resemble those of the bustard; and have likewise a hard knob like a horn at the articulation of the pinion. After stripping the large feathers from the body of the female, there appeared a grey down extremely fine and very thick. The down of the male is at least as beautiful as that of a swan. They would both make beautiful muffs \*.

The teal of this country are much superior in beauty to those of Europe. Their bills and feet are blue, their wings green and gold, and the rest of their bodies much more shining and beautiful than those of the Guinea hens. I skinned one of them, and having preserved the head and feet, and stuffed the coat with fine-

\* Their beauty induced several of our officers to order a great number of these geese and bustards to be skinned with a view of carrying them to France; but for want of proper care, they were most of them lost. Mine shared the same fate for want of room to stow them in my cabin.



fine moss, placed it in its natural attitude. I made a present of it to a virtuoso of St. Malo. I likewise brought to France and deposited in the cabinet of natural history, in the Abbey of St. Germain des Prés at Paris, the head and feet of a large waterfowl of the carnivorous kind, which I have mentioned under the name of *Quebranta-huessos*. I have given its figure, on account of the singularity of its bill.

It would have been a desirable circumstance to have possessed the art of preserving the eyes of these animals in their natural state. Diamonds and rubies can by no means equal the fire, the beauty and the lustre of the eyes of a certain species of waterfowl or diver, which is frequently seen on the sea-shore.

The pupil is surrounded with a circle of the finest vermilion or carmine. The head is black, but the feathers from the eye to the back of the head are of a shining white mixed with some streaks of black.

In these islands there are likewise prodigious numbers of small eagles or brown hawks, of the size of the largest of our cocks; but the wings of which when extended, were at least three feet across. The large feathers of the wings are of a bright yellow, mixed with brown in transverse stripes. There is likewise a kind of eagle, of the size and colour of a turkey hen, white, red, or yellow. In this kind of eagle, at the bottom of the bill, there is a skin of a very fine red, strewed with pretty long black hairs. When this bird is dead, the red colour fades, and the skin changes to a very pale rose colour. Its talons are scaly and of a light grey, as well as those of some of the smaller kinds I have mentioned. The rest have yellow feet. The talons of this last mentioned species are as strong and large as those of the larger kind. Sparrow-hawks are likewise found here, with white breasts and necks; those of others are variegated with white, grey and red.

Muscles are very commonly found along the coast. We more than once attempted to eat some of them; but found them so full of pearls, that it was impossible to chew them: as these pearls being very hard endangered the breaking of our teeth, and when they

they were broken in pieces, they left a kind of sand in the mouth which was very disagreeable. As I believed the production of these pearls to be owing to some disorder in this shell-fish, I imagined that this disorder might be owing to this animal's suffering from the want of water during the ebb of the sea. I therefore fancied, that if we took such as were constantly supplied with water, we should find them without pearls. The muscles I had found among the roots of the sea grass, confirmed me in this opinion. I opened some both of the common and Magellanic sorts; they were without pearls and excellent. I carried two or three dozen to the encampment; they were liked by all the lovers of this shell-fish, and we afterwards ate them frequently.

No remarkable occurrence happened from the 11th to Thursday the 22d of March. Provisions and other articles were landed for the use of the people who staid to establish this new colony. On the 21st, we laid the first stone of the pyramid.

There was one circumstance however that deserved notice, and occasioned various reflections among those who were witnesses of it. It was related to me on my return to the encampment.

On Thursday the 22d of March, I was desirous of knowing the truth of this circumstance, and have since been convinced of it more than once by ocular evidence. We carried over about a dozen hogs male and female. One of these was castrated. After they were all landed they went to seek their livelihood in the fields, and never failed to return every evening to pass the night together near the encampment. At first they had a kind of litter of hay made for them, which though in the open air they certainly enjoyed very much, as they repaired to it so punctually. Somebody observed that the castrated hog generally returned about half an hour-sooner than the rest, took several turns round the litter and placed the hay in order; that he took and carried it in his teeth to their lodging, and filled every place where it was wanting. When the rest returned they lay down together, and he took his place last. If any one of them found his situation



uneasy, he got up, and falling upon the castrated hog, bit him, and obliged him to fetch more hay to make up the litter. The females in particular were very nice in this article.

During our stay one of them brought forth eleven pigs, and another twelve. Besides these young ones, we left there eight sows and one boar. It is easy to judge how fast they will multiply.

I returned to the encampment with an intention of staying only three days, and setting out on the 23d, to go by land to a bay situated to the South East of the island. M. de Bougainville having seen it in the tour he made some days after our arrival, thought it delightful, and called it *Beau-port*, as it was well adapted for a commodious harbour. I was to accompany M. l'Huillier, and two or three others thither to take a draught of it. But as soon as M. de Bougainville and myself came to the encampment, M. l'Huillier urged the necessity of postponing the expedition to *Beau-port* to the Thursday following, his presence being absolutely necessary to carry on the building. M. de la Gyraudais was the only person who returned on board the *Sphinx*. M. de Bougainville lay in his cott; I spread a mattress upon some hay in the same tent, and lay in this manner nine nights. I employed the day in visiting the adjacent parts, in botanical researches, and in other inquiries into natural history.

On Saturday the 24th of March, it was proposed that we should go in search of the three stray horses, to secure them with ropes, and bring them to the encampment. A party of thirty who set out on this errand, found and surrounded them. They suffered us to approach so near, that M. de St. Simon seized one of them by the mane; but the mare which he held disengaged herself by a violent effort which threw him down, and leaped with the rest over the ropes we had put round them. They ran so far, that it was thought proper to give over the pursuit.

We had better success with the cows and heifers. These were in the same manner scattered and dispersed over the country; but a little calf that had been caught being brought near the encampment, and tied to a stake, the dam hearing it low in the evening came to give it the teat, and the rest followed her. By returning in this manner two or three days successively, these animals became accustomed to it, and repaired punctually every evening to the stable that was built for them.

On the 27th, M. de Bougainville and M. l'Huillier ordered their cotts to be carried to the chamber in the new building, which was intended for M. de Nerville. They proposed to me the removal of my bed, but I rather chose to stay in the tent, as the damp issuing from the walls, which were rough-cast this very day, might prove prejudicial.

I was near having reason to repent of my resolution that very night. At ten in the evening, the wind sprang up at South West, and continued so violent all day with frequent showers of rain, that it seemed as if the tent would be carried away, or blown down upon me at every blast. I lay there however the next night, but was obliged to change my quarters the day after, being the 29th.

The tents were struck to furnish wood for the building, I surrendered mine, and removed to M. de Nerville's quarter.

Mess. de Bougainville and de Nerville had, on the 21st, laid the first stone of the base of the pyramid, or kind of obelisk, intended to be erected in the center of the fort. A round silver plate, about two inches and a half in diameter, was deposited in the stone-work of the foundation; on one side of which was etched with aqua fortis, the draught of that part of the island where the fort and habitation were situated; on the middle, the obelisk with these words for the exergue, *Tibi serviat ultima Thule*. On the other side was the following inscription:



## Discovery.

Settlement of the *Malouine**Islands*, situated 51 d. 30 m. South

latit. and 60 d. 50 m. West long. E. of the mer.

of *Paris*, by the Eagle Frigate Captain *P.**Duclos Guyot*, Captain of a fire-ship, andthe Sphinx Sloop Captain *F. Chénard*,*Gyraudais* Lieutenant of a Frigate,fitted out by *Lewis de Bougainville* Colonel of Foot, Captain of  
the vessel, Commander of the expedition, *G. de**Bougainville de Nerville* Volunteer, and *P. Darboulin*Administrator General of the Posts in *France*. Construction of  
a Fort and Obelisk embellished with a medallion  
of his Majesty *Lewis XV.* agreeable to the plans of *A.**l'Huillier de la Serre* Engineer Geographer of the

Camps and Armies serving on this Expedition

under the Ministry of *E. de Choiseul*,Duke of *Stainville*. In*February 1764.*[With these words for the exergue, *Conamur tenues grandia.*]

This kind of medal is inclosed between two leaden plates, and the whole in a hollowed stone. Near it is placed a double glass bottle well stopped with mastic to resist the wet, containing a roll of paper on which were inscribed the names, surnames, ranks, and countries of all the persons who composed both the ship's companies employed on this expedition, and of the volunteers \*.

This fort was called *Fort de St. Louis*. It is situated on a rising ground, not overlooked by the neighbouring heights which

\* This list roll which is inserted in the original, is omitted by the Translator, as not being interesting to the English reader. The number of persons on board the two ships, including officers, sailors, passengers, servants, &c. amounted in all to 138, and 28 of these, including women and children, remained in the island for the establishment of the colony.

are at the distance of at least two full leagues. It commands all the adjacent country, and especially the entrance of the creek, at the extremity of which the new habitation is built. This entrance is with good reason called the *Goulet*, or *Gullet*; because when the sea is high, the opening is no more than a full pistol-shot in breadth.

M. Baslé and myself went on the 28th to see the large bay, where I gathered a great quantity of the most beautiful *Limas*, or cochleæ, with mother of pearl, and fasciated, and some flat patellæ, which were extremely fine. On the 29th, it blew a storm, and there fell a great deal of fleet, attended with squalls of wind.

On the 30th the wind blew very cold, with hazy and dark weather, which continued all night, a circumstance unusual in this country, at least since our arrival. Till this day, the 31st, the sky had almost constantly been fine and serene. We had white frosts two or three times, and once only the standing waters were skimmed over with ice; but for several days past there had been a coolness in the mornings and evenings, which in hot countries we should call *cold*. However from ten in the morning to five in the afternoon, you feel the warmth of May in those places which are sheltered from the wind.

The weather was hazy all night, and Sunday morning the first of April. About ten the wind dispersed the fog, and veered to the North North West, where it blew with some violence, but subsided at four in the afternoon, when I returned on board with almost all the officers who were not to winter in the new colony. M. de Bougainville and M. l'Huillier, were the only persons who staid to superintend the work on the roof of the building, which was almost finished.

The same day Laurence Lucas, carpenter of the Sphinx, put the finishing hand to the carving of the double flower-de-luce in stone, which was to be placed on the top of the pyramid. The two medallions in wood, one representing the bust of Lewis XV. and the other the arms of France, which were to be fixed on



two opposite sides of the pyramid were in great forwardness. All the provisions and other articles which were intended to be left upon the island were landed, and lodged in the Magazine.

On Monday morning the 2d, M. Duclos Guyot went in the yawl to sound the bay, round the small island covered with corn-flags, which was the nearest to the place where we were moored, and was called *Ile au Tonnelier*, or Cooper's island, because our cooper was settled there in order to carry on his business. M. Duclos every where found a good bottom, and concluded from the depth, that the true channel of the tide is on the side of this island opposite to that where we were moored. The afternoon was very windy.

On Tuesday the 3d, it was calm all day, and the weather fine. M. de Bougainville repaired to the habitation, to make every preparation for taking possession of these islands, having fixed the day for Thursday next.

M. de Nerville and myself, passed the whole afternoon upon the Burnt island, where we gathered a large salad of cressés and celery upon the banks of a pond at the eastern point. The latter of these plants is very common in all the parts of this island that we have visited.

On the 4th, the wind which blew very fresh, varied from the South South West, to the West North West, the weather was fine, and the sea ran very high; which did not however prevent our sportsmen from going out to kill bustards. Four officers belonging to the Sphinx, had brought from thence a hundred and three some days before. Our officers, encouraged by this success, determined to go thither, and killed eighty-three. Two of them killed but 36 this day, with fourteen ducks and teals. They gave 18 bustards to the Sphinx, on account of the preparations that were making for their departure, which was fixed for the next day. The fort fired one and twenty cannon to announce the ceremony of taking possession, which was to be performed the next day.

At

At four o'clock on Thursday morning the fifth of April, our longboat was sent with her hawser and anchor, on board the Sphinx; after which she weighed her two anchors, and got under sail at half an hour past seven, with a favourable wind and fine weather.

At day-break the fort made a discharge of one and twenty pieces of cannon.

The moment the Sphinx sailed, we all embarked in our yawls and one fishing-boat to go to the fort. As soon as we landed at the gullet, the fort saluted us with several guns. A party of the inhabitants, who had taken the resolution to remain in this new colony appeared in arms at the gullet. They conducted us to the fort, at the foot of which we found all the rest under arms. After the parade they accompanied us to the fort with drums beating.

All the company being assembled at the fort, the pyramid was opened; I then solemnly sang the *Te Deum*; after that the psalm *Exaudiat*, then thrice *Domine salvum fac regem*. After this I rehearsed the verse *Fiat manus tua, Domine, super virum dexteræ tuæ*; the response was, *Et super filium hominis quem confirmasti tibi*, then the prayer *Quæsumus, omnipotens Deus, ut famulus tuus Ludovicus Rex noster, &c.* for the prosperity of his reign. We cried *Vive le Roy* seven times and fired twenty-one cannon. We cried again seven times *Vive le Roy*. M. de Bougainville then produced the king's commission, appointing a governor in the new colony, which was delivered to M. de Nerville, who was immediately received and acknowledged as such. M. de Bougainville, in the king's name, likewise proclaimed the other officers, who were in the same manner unanimously acknowledged.

An altar was likewise erected in the fort at the very base of the pyramid. I intended to have said mass there, to make the ceremony of taking possession more sacred and solemn. But the wind blew with such violence, that notwithstanding a tent was erected there, it was thought proper to content ourselves with the ceremony I have described. We afterwards repaired to the  
apartments;



apartments in the habitation, where at eleven o'clock we had a plentiful breakfast, the allowance to all the ship's company being doubled on the occasion.

As soon as breakfast was over, we went to visit the several spots on which different sorts of grain had been sown eight or ten days before; and found them sprung up, and in a very healthy and flourishing state.

On our return, I stopped at a place where I had observed a pretty common plant, which makes an excellent infusion: this I shall describe hereafter. Having only time to gather a little of it, we took our leave, and returned on board.

On Friday the 6th, at six in the morning, M. de St. Simon and two others went on shore in the longboat to water, and killed seventy bustards, twelve ducks, some teals, and several snipes. These bustards, together with a great number that were killed before, were put in barrels; so that we had two tierces and some barrels to supply us on our return to France.

The calm and the fine weather at sun-rise, favoured the execution of M. de Bougainville's design to survey and take draughts of the great bay where we lay at anchor, of its creeks and the environs. With this view, Mess. l'Huillier, Duclos, his two sons, Mess. de St. Simon, Donat, le Roy and myself, embarked in the longboat, and landed at the bottom of the bay in a creek, which runs up a great way within the land. You see it in the chart of the harbour. Mess. de St. Simon, Donat, and le Roy, went out a sporting, while Mess. l'Huillier, Duclos, Seigneurie, some others and myself, made observations from the eminence or mountain E. When we had finished our observations, and taken a draught of the bay with the graphometer, we amused ourselves with observing a ruin, produced, as it should seem, by some earthquake. It afforded a prospect so dreadfully pleasing that I was extremely mortified at my want of time, and the necessary instruments, to sketch out a perfect representation of it. A painter might here find materials to compose a picture of the  
finest

finest ruins. A sketch of it is given in the plate, as also of a kind of amphitheatre situated a hundred paces from it.

We were no less astonished at the sight of the infinite number of stones of all sizes thrown one upon another, and yet ranged as if they had been piled negligently to fill up some hollows. We admired with insatiable delight the prodigious works of nature. I attempted in vain to engrave a name upon one of these stones, which formed a table a foot and an half thick, ten feet long, and six broad; it was so hard that neither my knife nor a punch could make any impression upon it. I tried several in the same manner which were equally hard. I broke off a piece by striking a corner with another stone, and all the pieces that were broken off had the appearance of freestone porphyzied.

This freestone as it is found in its beds, which run in all directions, is every where cut into tables of a different size and thickness; but in such a manner as if art had been used.

These ruins represented in the plate, resemble in several places the gates of a city, whose arches are demolished; and of which there remain only some walls to the right and left, still raised twenty or five and twenty feet, in the parallel angles forming the entrance. They are like the walls of a town, the stones of which have been ranged according to the level and the perpendicular, as they are in our walls composed of freestone. Some angles are likewise to be seen here, both saliant and re-entrant, some out-works more than fifteen feet high, and some rectilineal projections like cornishes, advancing at least half a foot, and which run at the same height all along the posterior or internal, as well as the anterior or external parts of the ruins. The only things wanting are the mouldings.

To the left of the track leading from the spot where we landed, we met with the eminence on which the stones are ranged like the arches of an amphitheatre: the figure of which I have given. Beyond these ruins lies a valley more than two hundred feet deep, and about half a quarter of a league broad,



broad, the bottom of which is covered with stones thrown together promiscuously, and seems to have served as a bed to a river or some large torrent, which running through the hollows made by these eminences, probably discharged itself into the great western bay I have mentioned. The eminence which is beyond the valley appears to be covered with ruins, similar to those upon the eminence on this side. Before you come to these you meet with an esplanade, or platform of earth, about twenty or twenty-four yards broad, which runs from the base of the amphitheatre, beyond the first opening of these ruins, which I said resembled the entrance or gate of a city. The rubbish of these seeming walls obstructs the continuation of this esplanade where you see two pieces of water, or reservoirs, one nearly round, the other oval, at a small distance from each other; the first about twenty-five feet in diameter, the other thirty. A gentle declivity fifty feet broad leads from the esplanade to the ruins.

From the bottom of the hill you see kinds of hollows intirely filled with these promiscuous heaps of stones.

Between these hollows are irregular spots of ground, twelve, fifteen, twenty, and twenty-five feet in breadth, and twenty, thirty, and at least fifty in length, covered with herbage and heath, as if they had escaped the shock. Between these promiscuous heaps of stones, are every where left void spaces or interstices, whose depth cannot be estimated. The smallest of these stones, none of which are angular, the corners being rounded, are two feet in length, and one in breadth or thereabouts; their figure however is not regular. They are likewise composed of a species of freestone which is of a very hard quality. It is an hour's walk from the place of our landing to the rubbish, and the road is level all the way as far as the foot of the eminence on which the ruins are seen.

As we returned, I gathered a little bag full of a plant which I shall describe in the sequel under the name of *Lucé musqué*, or *Thé des Isles Malouines*: I ate twenty of the fruits of a small herb  
which

which our mariners call *Plat de bierre*: and we returned on board loaded with game.

After the ceremony of taking possession, M. de Nerville invited us to a dinner he intended to give the Sunday following, by way of taking leave, and wishing us a speedy return to France. We agreed to wait upon him. But our captain M. Duclos Guyot, having represented to M. de Bougainville, that the longer we deferred our departure, the greater would be our danger of meeting with bad weather and a tempestuous sea, on account of the approach of winter in this country; that, two days sooner or later were of consequence, especially as M. de Bougainville wished to give the court as early an account of his expedition as possible; and that, it was therefore necessary to seize the first opportunity of getting under sail: the resolution was accordingly taken on Saturday evening, to sail the next morning if the weather proved favourable.

On Sunday the 8th of April, we sailed at half past four in the afternoon, the fort saluting us with twenty discharges of cannon. M. l'Huillier and some others were dispatched early in the morning to the habitation, to make our compliments of departure, and to bring two hogs and two dozen of fowls to make broth for those who might have the misfortune to be ill.

When we arrived in the great bay, that is, when we had got beyond the islands situated in it, we lay by to wait for our longboat, which arrived at six with our great anchor. When we had taken them and our yawl on board, we got under way at half past seven. At half past nine we were North and South of the island at the entrance of the bay. From this time to midnight, we directed our course to the East, at the rate of three leagues and two thirds an hour.

I could not have conceived, that at fifty-one degrees and an half latitude, and sixty longitude from the meridian of Paris, a climate could have been found so temperate as that of the Malouine Islands. We landed at the eastern point, a part of the island exposed perhaps more than any other to cold, white



frosts, and other inconveniences incident to a situation almost intirely encompassed with the sea, or with bays, forming a peninsula swept by the South West and West winds, which are the most frequent in those parts. We had reason to draw this conclusion during more than two months stay in the country even in the time of autumn, when the cold might be expected to be felt early in that latitude; and from the herbage in all the parts we visited, inclining to the North East and East. Notwithstanding this, except the grass which was withered by the heats of summer, as is usual in all other countries, the other plants, and even the grass of the second growth, were still very green at the time of our departure.

In the quarter of the island which we saw, the land every where presents a very agreeable aspect. Mountains, or rather eminences which we called mountains, encompass plains farther than the eye can see, divided by little rising grounds and hills which communicate by gentle declivities. At the foot of each a rivulet, more or less considerable runs in winding mazes, and discharges itself into the sea through the numerous creeks of the bays. That in which we anchored (which might be called *Baye de St. Louis* on account of the fort of this name which is erected on the land which terminates it, or rather *Baye Royale*, on account of the pyramid dedicated to Louis XV. our well-beloved monarch) runs up more than six leagues within land, and naturally forms a good harbour in which more than two thousand ships may ride at anchor. There is every where a good bottom, islands of different sizes, peninsulas to the number of about twelve, which afford such shelter from the most violent winds, that perhaps there is never any swell in those parts.

The entrance of this bay is at least two leagues over, and is contracted by a pretty large island at some distance from the South East point, as may be seen in the chart.

This great bay which was discovered fifteen days before we left the island, has been examined and traced in part by M. de Belcourt and M. Martin, who made an excursion thither of two

or three days and nights. As we were desirous of obtaining a more perfect knowledge of its extent, Mess. de St. Simon and Donat set out some days after the return of the two gentlemen I have just now mentioned. They went at first to the place where it approaches nearest to the habitation, which is at the distance of two little leagues, and then kept along the shore till they came to the bottom of it. They passed here to the opposite shore, and followed it ten leagues. The brooks and a considerable river which it was difficult to cross, obstructing their farther progress, they determined to climb the highest mountain they could find; from whence they thought they should be able to discover the entrance of this bay and the rest of its course. They judged at that time that it ran at least fifteen leagues within the land, and formed into a peninsula that part of the country where we had established our settlement.

According to their account, the coast of this bay presents to the view an excellent soil, and an agreeable prospect. At every quarter of a league it is watered by brooks and small rivers, one of which, that runs from the West, appeared to them to be sixty feet broad. They found a prodigious number of bustards in flocks of twenty or forty, and a great many other birds. Upon the whole, they counted twenty-six pretty large islands in that part of the bay which they surveyed.

It may be doubted, whether there is not actually a strait which divides these islands, and communicates from North to South as some navigators have imagined, and whether the appearance of this bay might not have led them to form such a conjecture. Perhaps they saw only its entrance, or not venturing on account of its running so deep within the land and its great breadth, to proceed farther into it, concluded that it formed a strait\*.

After an attentive examination of the soil at the habitation, and that of its environs, I think I may venture to pronounce it  
of

\* It was found on a second voyage, that such a strait actually exists; and that its entrance on the northern side, is at the place called by us *la Conchée*.



of a mineral nature. The ochreous earths, both red and yellow, the spars, the quartz, which are every where to be found, are evident proofs of it. The rocks which are commonly covered with grey and reddish slate, sufficiently indicate a great quantity of sulphur. On breaking the tops of the rocks of quartz which appear on the surface, with crows and mattocks, I found in the crevices, marks of a vitriolick and coppery matrix. I likewise discovered a substance of a greenish cast, which had the astringency and acidity of verdegrease: I applied a little of it to the tip of my tongue, and was forced to spit very much for a full quarter of an hour. Here you frequently meet with pyrites which are round, and sulphureous; and with others of irregular figures, which one would conclude belonged to an iron-mine, both on account of their weight and their brown colour, mixed with an ochreous earth of a reddish yellow, or of the colour of rust. In digging to lay the foundations of the houses, M. de Bougainville observed in the earth that was thrown up, several pieces of broken quartz, which exhibited to the eye spangles that glittered like gold. He picked up some which he brought to me, and I imagined at first sight that it might be *mica*, or the yellow talc. However as the talc is not usually found in the quartz, I thought it might be that species of sulphur which glitters in the pyrites. We were unfortunately unprovided with the necessary materials for making experiments; we had no coals, or wood, no furnace, or even aqua regia, nor could any be made with so small a quantity of aqua fortis. The crucibles I brought were useless to me. There was besides, too small a quantity of these little glittering particles, and we had too many other objects to engage our attention, to be at leisure to ransack the earth for such a collection of them, as would be sufficient to make an experiment. I therefore contented myself with visiting the place where the ground had been dug, and examining the earths that were thrown up. In a hollow at the depth of about six feet, I perceived a bed of earth lying obliquely, six inches broad in some places, the rest of an unequal breadth,

breadth, which entered the ground in the same direction. This bed was composed of quartz covered with a rusty earth, yellow and red ochre, and a sort of hollow flints, several of which were filled with a species of fine bole, of a flesh or rose colour in some, and of the colour of fine lacca in others; several, with a very fine earth of a brownish red colour. The cover, or stony crust which surrounds these fine earths, is commonly of the same colour with the inclosed substance. I have met with some of them grey, very much resembling silver ore. Their colour became rather deeper when exposed to the fire, which gave me reason to conclude that they are of an ochreous quality, and that they consist chiefly of iron. On my return to France, I shewed some of these pieces of quartz to persons versed in experiments on fossils, who likewise judged them to be iron ore.

Having therefore no hopes of making discoveries of this kind, I turned my attention on the plants of the country. I met with only four or five of those kinds which grow in France. Here is plenty of red and white celery, which has a sweet and pleasant taste, though produced without culture. We ate it in fallads and soups every day. Some of our mariners called it *Macedonian Parsley*, and were afraid of it at first, but ate it afterwards without scruple, especially as the country afforded no other greens.

M. Duclos, captain of the *Eagle*, found some hartshorn, or rocket which he called *Cressonette*, and brought it to the encampment. On tasting it, we found it rather too poignant. As M. de Neville and myself were walking along the side of a pond, we met with some very good cresses, and frequently ate them mixed with celery. Along the banks of a little rivulet, I have seen the *Grenouillette* or crowfoot, as well as the ranunculus, which is cultivated in gardens for the beauty of its flowers.

Our pilots observing that we were fond of a plant which had rather a singular appearance, were induced to taste it. It has a milder and more agreeable acidity than even the round leaved sorrel. They found it so palatable that they put it into their  
soup



soup the same day, and as we did not perceive that they suffered any inconvenience from it, we ordered some of it in our own.

This plant produces leaves ranged in a circular form, sometimes eighteen or twenty in number, at the extremity of a cherry-coloured petiole as thick as a crow quill, round and generally from seven to eight inches high, always rising above the plants which surround it. The leaf is of a light green.

It has only one stem nearly similar to the footstalk of the leaves, which supports a single white flower consisting of a pentaphyllus calix, and having the figure of a very small tulip; it expands in the same manner, and emits a very sweet smell like the almond. The leaf of the plant is shaped like a heart, the extremity of which is very much lengthened: each leaf is fastened to the petiole or footstalk by this extremity, and forms a kind of hoop. See the figure in the plate. I have never seen any of these leaves quite expanded; they are almost always sunk into a channel. Ten, twelve, and often more of these leaves or leafy stems proceed from the point of a long twisted root, covered with small pointed scales of a red colour inclining to vermillion, lying horizontally two or three fingers deep. This plant is very common. We called it *Vinaigrette* from its taste. Perhaps it belongs to the class of wild sorrel.

The plant represented in the figure next to that of the *Vinaigrette*, may be ranked among the *Satyrions*: its leaf seems at first sight to suggest this conjecture: however as the orchises have usually no more than two tubercles at their root, and this plant has twelve roots or more, shaped like those of the goat's beard and very long, I think it ought not to be placed in the class of the orchises. I take it to be the *Epipactis*, mentioned by Father Feuillée, page 729. pl. 29. under the denomination of *Epipactis amplo flore luteo vulgo gravilla*: the root of the *Epipactis* of the Malouine Islands, bears however a greater resemblance to that of the *Epipactis floribus uno versu dispositis vulgo Nuil*, which he mentions p. 726. and is represented in pl. 17. It grows in the dry and barren parts of Chili, and the *Epipactis*  
flore

*flore luteo* in the moist parts of the same country: that of the Malouine Islands likewise grows in low and moist places. The root of this consists of several knobs, which are formed into a bunch. I have seen from ten to twelve of them, and sometimes more. Their length on an average is three inches, and some of them are more than half an inch in thickness. They are covered with a small thin skin, inclosing a friable, soft, watery substance, which at first has a sweetish taste, but when it is chewed leaves so strong a flavour or relish of ambergrease in the mouth, that it a little resembles cat's urine.

I have not been able to discover the flowers of this plant, though I have seen several of every size. The highest of them have capsules filled with seed, and a kind of tuft at the extremity resembling a cluster of dried petals of a reddish cast, without any determinate smell.

The seed is a very fine red dust, that fills the hollow part of the capsule, which is divided into four or five compartments. After the most careful examination, I have not been able to discover any other kind of seed.

The stem of the plant never rises higher than seven or eight inches, and is covered with pretty long leaves, which frequently form a shallow channel; some are perfectly flat: they are all smooth, and of a green colour, resembling that of the leaf of the orchis.

In all places washed by the water there is found a species of spleen-wort, which grows like a fungus, and supports a stem with hollow leaves, in which the seed is contained: a circumstance not common in any species of the maidenhair, in which the seed is a dust adhering to the verge of the prone disk of the leaf. In this plant we are describing, the stem that supports the seed rises singly on the right side of the root, the leaves being at the same time circularly disposed, or vertical. The stem itself, or if you will, the only leaf in the whole plant, which supports the seed, is in proportion near an inch longer than the longest



of those leaves which grow out of the same root. This seed however, like that of the maidenhair, is a thick red dust.

In the fields, amongst the herbage which covers almost the whole surface of the soil of the island, there is a pretty common plant with a white flower, radiated like that of the dandelion, but the petals are sharp pointed. The leaves the largest of which are three inches long, and the stem, which is about a foot high, are of a green colour and rather soft like cotton. Upon each stem is a single flower, which smells exactly like Benzoin.

There is another plant, whose stem and leaves resemble those of the preceding, which bears a bunch of yellow flowers, twelve or fifteen in number, equally radiated, and very pleasing both to the sight and smell. This flower is supported by a squamous calyx. The root is a mass of small fibres, all terminating at the bottom of the plant.

Here are also two plants to be met with, which both produce a red fruit: the fruit of one of them so much resembles a raspberry, that it is easy to mistake it when separated from the plant: its taste is something like that of the mulberry, but much more agreeable. It is a creeping plant, strikes root at each joint, and has a small leaf like that of the yoke-elm.

The leaf of the other plant is rather hairy, something like that of the mallow. The stem which supports the fruit is so little elevated, that a part of it is frequently under-ground. It is shaped like a mulberry, but of a lively vermilion: the seed is dry and almost tasteless.

Amongst the herbage and heath, there grows another plant full as remarkable as those I have mentioned. Its fruit is pleasing to the eye, and agreeable to the taste. It makes an excellent liquor infused only in brandy and sugar, as it has a very grateful odour of amber and musk, which would not disgust any one who has even an aversion to those two perfumes, and would be infinitely pleasing to those who are fond of them. The Indians who inhabit the southern parts of Canada, prefer the  
infusion

infusion of this plant to the best tea. They drink it both for pleasure and health; they say that it cheers the heart, restores and fortifies the stomach, cleanses the brain, and communicates a balsamic virtue to the blood. M. Duclos our captain, a Canadian, and some officers belonging to our frigate, who made a considerable stay in that country during the last war, assured me of this, and took great pains to provide a plentiful stock of it. They call this plant *Lucet musqué*. It has the delicate and sweet scent of myrtle. Its ligneous branches lie close to the ground, creeping like those of the wild thyme, which this plant resembles in its stems and leaves, with this difference only, that they are not quite so acute. I never saw it in flower; nor do any of our officers remember to have seen it: but whatever its flower may be, it is succeeded by a fruit resembling that of the myrtle, only larger when it comes to maturity. At first it appears red, and most commonly grows white as it ripens. It then becomes oval, and is crowned with four green points which expand themselves like those of the pomegranate. It contains a small quantity of seeds, like the *Vitis Idæa*; its juice is sweet. Most of these fruits are as large as that of the hawthorn, but I have seen some of the size of a floe. See the plates.

Another plant whose name and properties I am unacquainted with, grows in sandy places upon the sea-coast: but it is uncommon. Suspecting that it might have some virtues, which, if discovered, might prove of advantage to mankind, I gathered the seed. The leaves of it, which resemble the head of a blunted spear, and are nearly oval, are produced on a long stalk which rises from the root itself. They are more woolly than those of the *Verbascum*, called *High-taper*, or *Mullein*. Its flowers are yellow, radiated, disposed in bunches, and supported by a calyx, which becomes round like that of an artichoke, and when the flower is fallen, contains a long angular seed much like that of endive.

We met with but one kind of shrub in that part of the country which we visited. It is found in moist lands, on the



little hills through which the waters pass in their descent from the heights. This shrub grows to the size of rosemary, which it perfectly resembles in its leaves, except that they are shorter and rather smaller. The flowers are white, much like those of the Easter daisy, or the daisy of the fields. They are not ranged in the form of ears like those of rosemary, but each flower is placed at the extremity of each small branch, in such a manner that the shrub appears intirely covered with them.

The flowers and leaves have scarce any smell; and the little they have does not resemble that of rosemary. It is certainly not the plant which Frezier mentions in his account of the South Sea by the name of the P . . . . an Indian name, and which the author of admiral Anson's voyage affirms to be very common at Port St. Julian, on the coast of the Patagonians, situated in almost the same degree of latitude with the Malouine Islands, where the shrub I speak of is also very common: but he says, that it resembles rosemary and has the same smell. The bark of this on the Malouine Islands is greyish, tolerably smooth, and the wood is yellow.

Among the shrubs may be ranked a ligneous plant, which commonly grows in such parts of these islands as are supplied with fresh running water. At the distance of some paces it might be taken for a small rose-tree; but upon a nearer examination, the leaves, which come out in pairs, rather resemble that of pimpernel. It is indeed rather longer, and its taste as well as the top which elevates the seed, bear some affinity to it: this top is oval, not unlike the outward coat of the chesnut, or one of those red berries which the sweet briar, or wild rose exhibits in autumn. This shrub has a creeping stem, sometimes an inch in thickness, and four or five feet in length. From this stem are produced branches eight or ten inches high, which are terminated by the flower and the seed. I did not see any of these in flower, it being too late in the season.

The drier soils produce two or three sorts of broom with a red fruit, which differ much from the European kind. They have

have all a resinous smell. There is another pretty large plant which tastes exactly like the young shoots of the pine-tree, called in Canada the *Sapinette*, of which is made a fermented liquor of the same name, which is very wholesome. We tried to make the same kind of liquor with this plant: those who had been in Canada affirmed that it had the same taste. We drank of it several times, and found it exceedingly good. It will be of great service to those who may hereafter settle in these islands; as this plant is to be found there in great plenty, and the liquor that is made from it may be used instead of beer. The stem and leaves are of a pale green inclining to yellow, and may be classed with those creeping plants which have a round stem very pliant, and sometimes as thick as the barrel of an eagle's quill, though oftner that of a goose-quill. The leaves come out in pairs on the sides of the branches, being fastened to a very short footstalk, and are shaped pretty much like those of the gum-tree, which I have spoken of before. This plant flourishes as well in low, as in high and dry grounds. The flower, which is herbaceous, leaves behind it a white tuft shaped like a loose brush, and bears no fruit.

The leaves of the largest of the two kinds of broom which produce it, are round, and of a whitish green; they are crowded in such numbers round the branches that they quite conceal them. The fruit is of the size of a pea, of a red colour, and is tolerably well tasted.

The leaves of the other are placed in the same manner round the branches, but are smaller, terminating in a point, and are of a very fine green. The fruit has a kind of berry like that of the hawthorn; but its colour is a fine carmine: and it is smaller than that of the last mentioned broom. The plant is likewise not so large: it is pretty commonly found among the gum-trees, between which its branches insinuate themselves in such a manner that you would take it for a branch of the same plant, though with different leaves supporting the fruit.

This



This gum-tree forms but one green head, as its leaves do not exceed each other in length more than the fourth part of a line. It requires a very close inspection to distinguish them. They are as it were glued one above another in the form of a rose. The flower so nearly resembles the capsule which contains the seed, that it may easily be mistaken for it. This capsule greatly resembles that of the aniseed, but it is of a grey earth colour. I have seen several of these gum-trees more than ten feet at their greatest diameter, and from four to four and an half in height. They are in general nearly circular; but the largest are shaped like a potatoe cut in two.

I have met with few remarkable sea plants except that which our mariners called *Baudreux*. Its stems rise to the surface of the water, upon which they extend a great way, and are supported by means of a kind of bubble filled with air, from which the stalk of the leaf is generated.

These baudreux are found in great quantities along the coast, and even a full league from land, in places from fifteen to eighteen fathoms deep: so that the stem, in order to reach the surface and extend itself so far upon it, must be twenty fathoms in length. I once amused myself with taking measure of one which the waves had by chance broken off, and thrown upon the surface; I thought I should never have seen the end of it.

The roots of these baudreux, as well as the stem of the plant, are yellow, interwoven with each other so as to form a large bunch, which affords a shelter to the finest muscles, both of the Magellanic as well as the smooth and common kinds. Here are likewise found purpura, cochleæ, and several other shells. The mother of pearl and fasciated limas live amongst the stems and leaves.

These leaves are two feet and an half in length, and their greatest breadth is four inches. They are of a yellow red, resembling in colour the leaf of a dead tree which begins to rot. Their superficies is uneven, as if the leaf was figured. See the plates.

This

This plant produces thirty stems from a single root, which is fastened to the bottom of the sea by one extremity, shaped like the broad end of a trumpet, or wide funnel. From this proceeds a bundle of roots or intertwined stems, among which stones and shells of the kind I have mentioned are frequently found. The leaves grow upon the stem at intervals. A mucilaginous and frothy fluid oozes from the stems, and affords nourishment to the shell-fish that adhere to them. When the waves have dislodged these bundles from the bottom, and thrown them upon the shore, and when the leaves becoming withered by the action of the air, and the rays of the sun, are separated from them, our mariners call them *Goemon* or Sea-grass. If one is not careful to take out the shell-fish as soon as the sea which has thrown them on shore has ebbed, the shells are not worth preserving: the sun calcines them, destroys their finest colours, and reduces them to lime, so that they become friable between the fingers. In order therefore to collect such of them as deserve a place in the cabinets of the curious, these weeds must be pulled up from the bottom of the sea with the drag, or the shell-fish picked out from the weeds as soon as the sea has thrown them on shore.

The *lepas*, or *patellæ*, of the Malouine Islands are superior in beauty to any in France. They are for the most part oval. The inner surface exhibits the finest mother of pearl; the bottom of the concavity is often lined with the red brown tortoise-shell, which appears to be gilt. The outward surface is striated and channeled, the projecting parts are of a brown tortoise-shell colour, and the bottom is variegated with mother of pearl and gilt tortoise-shell.

I have seen some that were three inches and upwards at their greatest diameter. There are five or six sorts of them which are more or less oval; in some the cavity is of a considerable depth, in others, though of the same diameter, it is less deep by three-fourths. I have some in my possession an inch and an half broad at their small diameter, which are not three lines in depth:



depth; and others an inch broad whose cavity is an inch deep. The inner surface of these is most commonly of the colour of fine white porcelain, and the bottom of the cavity of gilt tortoise-shell.

There are some of this kind very large and beautiful, having an oval aperture in the center of the top, white within, and stained with stripes of purple and violet, which widen as they extend from the center to the circumference.

The fourth sort is by some called Dragoon's cap; the largest aperture I have had an opportunity of observing does not exceed from nine to ten lines in diameter, and six or seven in depth; the outward superficies is grey, almost smooth, and has sometimes stripes inclining to brown; the inside is usually of the colour of the lees of red wine with a little tincture of brown.

In many of these patellæ the perforation in their convex part is not placed directly in the middle, but rather towards one of the edges of the greatest diameter. In one of them it is situated as near as possible to one of the extremities. This patella is very flat; its shell is so thin, that it requires great nicety and care not to break it. The two surfaces are smooth, and silvered over when the external one is stripped of its outward covering, which is of a filenot colour. Here is likewise found a concamerated patella which is small and white, both within and without; I never saw any of this sort but upon the shore, and they were always without the fish. To these may be added that sort which our seamen call *Gondolas* or *Boats*; because it resembles them in figure when the bottom is turned uppermost: but their upper surface is like the coat of the millepedes. It is composed of eight pieces, inserted into each other in such a manner, that the fish can roll itself up, form itself into a round ball, and inclose itself in its shell. A fleshy substance runs quite round with rough hairs three or four lines in length. The shell is variegated with stripes or streaks of a fine bluish green, a milky-coloured white, and a darkish brown.

The Malouine islands abound with four kinds of muscles; the common, the Magellanic, and two other sorts which differ in shape both from the common and Magellanic. I have seen some of these last sorts, the shell of which was from five to six inches long, and three inches broad. Those which are gathered from the rocks left dry when the sea retires, are commonly full of pearls, some of which are pretty enough. Those which adhere to the shell, or are dispersed over the body of the muscle, are of a violet blue inclining to black; they are often uneven, and bear a great resemblance to turnip-seed. The pearls of the large Magellanic kinds are white, but seldom of a good size, and clear colour. They are likewise very apt to break in attempting to separate them from the shell. Those which are found on the body of the muscle, are properly nothing more than seeds. It is highly probable that these pearls proceed from some disorder in the fish, as they are seldom found in muscles which are constantly washed by the sea-water. The want of water, at a time when the sun darts his rays fiercely, undoubtedly occasions an extreme thirst, and a languor that impairs them, and creates an obstruction; from which these pearls are generated.

The shell of one of the other two kinds of muscles is white, transparent, and so light that the least breath of air blows it off the hand. The other, though larger, is of a very shining red brown gold colour, particularly when under water, and the sun shines upon it. When empty, it is scarce heavier than the preceding one, for the wind alone throws it upon the shore. See the plate, &c.

The large and small Magellanic muscles are of the whiteness of mother of pearl, divided by purple stripes, adapted to the circular figure of the shell. The coat which covers the external surface is of a muddy brown: but when this is taken off, it displays a fine sky-blue veined with purple stripes. The channels diminish insensibly as they approach the sharp end, which is fine



mother of pearl, and from which they proceed as from their center. See the figure of these muscles in the plate.

A great number of other different shells engage the attention of the curious upon the coast of these islands: foliated buccina, spinose buccina, screw shells, of different kinds, *Purpura*, fasciated *Cochleæ*, concamerated *Cochleæ*, *Neritæ*, smooth *Chamæ*, striated *Chamæ*, Scollop shells, *Pectines*, *Echini*, Sea-*Asteriæ*, and a species of *Concha*, which our seamen call *Gueulle de Rayes*. This last shell has not till lately been known except among the fossil shells, and it has been doubted whether it existed in nature. In the subsequent voyages made to the same islands, so great a quantity of them has been collected, that they have been distributed among the cabinets in Paris: so that the only shell of the kind which I deposited, on my return, in the cabinet of the Abbey of St. Germain des Prés, is no longer a rarity.

There are probably several other shells along the coast of the main sea, which I have not had an opportunity of seeing, because the place where we anchored was about six leagues in the bottom of the bay; and the spot on which we pitched our tents, and fixed our habitation was near two leagues farther. Throughout this whole bay, I have seen no other kinds of shells than those I have described: nor did we meet with any fish besides those I have mentioned, except some white porpoises, and several whales.

There are three kinds of amphibious animals very commonly found on these islands; sea-wolves, sea-lions, and penguins. I have said something of each of these; but should add, with regard to the second, that the name of *sea-lion* does not so properly belong to those I have described, (and of which the author of Admiral Anson's Voyage treats pretty largely) as to another species, in which the hair that covers the back part of the head, neck and shoulders, is at least as long as the hair of a goat. It gives this amphibious animal an air of resemblance to the common lion of the forest, excepting the difference of size. The sea-lions of the kind I speak of, are twenty-five feet in length, and from nineteen to twenty in their greatest circumference. See the plate. In  
other

other respects they resemble the sea-lions, of which I have given the figure. Those of the small kind have a head resembling a mastiff's with close cropt ears.

The teeth of the sea-lions which have manes, are much larger and more solid than those of the rest. In these all the teeth which are inserted into the jaw-bone are hollow. They have only four large ones, two in the lower and two in the upper jaw. The rest are not even so large as those of a horse. I brought home one belonging to the true sea-lion, which is at least three inches in diameter, and seven in length, though not one of the largest. We counted twenty-two of the same sort in the jaw-bone of one of these lions where five or six were wanting. They were intirely solid, and projected scarce more than an inch, or an inch and an half beyond their sockets. They are nearly equal in solidity to flint, and are of a dazzling white. Several of our sea-men took them for white flints when they found them upon the shore. I could not even persuade them that they were not real flints, except by rubbing them against each other, or breaking some pieces off, to make them sensible that they exhaled the same smell as bones and ivory do when they are rubbed or scraped.

These sea-lions that have manes, are not more mischievous or formidable than the others. They are equally unwieldy and heavy in their motions; and are rather disposed to avoid than to fall upon those who attack them. Both kinds live upon fish, and water-fowl, which they catch by surprize, and upon grass. They bring forth and suckle their young ones among the corn-flags, where they retire at night, and continue to give them suck till they are large enough to go to sea. In the evening you see them assembling in herds upon the shore, and calling their dams in cries so much like lambs, calves and goats, that, unless apprised of it, you would easily be deceived. The tongue of these animals is very good eating: we preferred it to that of an ox or calf. For a trial we cut off the tip of the tongue hanging out of the mouth of one of these lions which was just killed. About sixteen or eighteen of us eat each a pretty large piece, and we all



thought it so good, that we regretted we could not cut more of it.

'Tis said that their flesh is not absolutely disagreeable. I have not tasted it : but the oil which is extracted from their grease is of great use. This oil is extracted two ways ; either by cutting the fat in pieces and melting it in large cauldrons upon the fire ; or by cutting it in the same manner upon hurdles, or pieces of board, and exposing them to the sun, or only to the air : this grease dissolves of itself, and runs into vessels placed underneath to receive it. Some of our seamen pretended that this last sort of oil, when it is fresh, is very good for kitchen uses : this, as well as the other, is commonly used for dressing leather, for vessels, and for lamps. It is preferred to that of the whale : it is always clear, and leaves no sediment.

The skins of the sea-lions are used chiefly in making port-manteaus, and in covering trunks. When they are tanned, they have a grain almost like Morocco. They are not so fine, but are less liable to tear, and keep fresh a longer time. They make good shoes and boots, which, when well seasoned, are waterproof.

The Penguin is so singular an animal, that it is not easy to say to what genus or species it belongs. It has a bill like a bird, and feathers ; but they are so fine and so unlike common feathers, that they have properly the appearance of hair as fine as silk, even when you are near enough to examine and touch them. You can only be convinced of the contrary by plucking one of them, upon which you discover the barrel and feathers of a quill. Instead of wings it has two fins, which are articulated in the same manner as the wings of birds, and are covered with very small feathers which might be taken for scales. At first sight it appears to have no thighs, and its feet, which are rough like those of geese, seem to come out directly from the body on each side of the tail, which is nothing more than a continuation of the feathers, nearly in the same manner as in ducks, but much shorter. The neck, the back, and the fins are of a bluish grey, blended through-

*See a Note  
in the last  
leaf.*

throughout with a pearl-coloured grey. The belly down from the neck is white. The old ones have a white stripe round their eyes mixed with yellow, which is not unlike spectacles. From thence this stripe extends on both sides along the neck, where it is sometimes double, and passing close to the fins, terminates at the feet which are of a darkish grey, and have very thick toes. Its noise is like the braying of an ass. Its aspect and its motion are different from that of birds. It walks upright, with its head and body erect, like a man. At the distance of an hundred paces, you would take it for one of the children of the choir in his habit. The largest of those we have taken may be about two feet ten inches high.

They live among the corn-flags like the sea-wolves, and earth themselves in holes like foxes. They suffer one to come so near them without stirring, that one may kill them with a stick. As you approach them, they look at you, turning their head to the right and then to the left, as if they made a jest of you, and muttered ironically *What a fine fellow have we got here!* They sometimes retreat when you are five or six feet from them, and run pretty much like a goose. If they are surprised and attacked, they run in upon you, and endeavour to defend themselves by striking at your legs with their bills; they have recourse to stratagem to gain their point, and pretending to retreat sideways, turn back in an instant, and bite so hard that they take the piece out, if you have nothing to secure your legs. They are usually seen in flocks; sometimes to the number of forty, ranged in order of battle, and eye you as you pass at the distance of twenty paces. Their flesh is black, and has rather a perfumed taste. We ate of them several times in ragouts, which we found to be as good as those made of a hare. We took off the skins from several, with a view of preserving them, but they were so oily that we threw them into the sea: it was likewise their moulting-season. I wrapped the skin of a young one in straw, which is in very good preservation: I have deposited it in the cabinet of natural



ral curiosities belonging to the Abbey of St. Germain des Prés. See the Plate.

When they take to the water, and find it deep enough to cover their neck and shoulders, they plunge into it, and swim as quick as any fish. If they meet with any obstacle, they spring four or five feet out of the water, and then plunge again, in order to pursue their course. Their dung exhibits only an exceeding fine earth, of a yellowish red, interspersed with small shining points like mica; it might be taken for the *Lapis fortuitus*.

As for the birds in these islands, there are but few found upon land. There is a flock of birds upon the shore like small thrushes, of a brown grey, so tame that they come flying almost upon your finger. I killed ten with a small switch in less than half an hour, without changing my place. They scratch among the sea-grass which is thrown on shore, and eat the worms and small shrimps, which we call *Puces de mer*, because they are skipping incessantly like fleas.

Blackbirds are likewise found here, and a kind of thrush with a yellowish belly. They feed in the same manner as the bird I have just now described. We killed a kind of starling in the fields, the upper part of whose neck, back, and wings, is marked and speckled almost like those in France; the bill is likewise shaped in the same manner: but the lower part of the neck and belly are of a very fine red, somewhat inclining to a flame colour; this red is besprinkled with some black spots. I could not give a true resemblance of it without making use of the minium or red lead. See the Plates.

Here are great numbers of wrens like those in France, snipes, curleus and sea-larks: likewise a small bird, not often seen, like those that hover about flocks of sheep; these birds have all an excellent flavour.

Upon the sea-coast is almost always seen a kind of duck, which flies in pairs and sometimes in flocks: the feathers of its wings are very short, and only serve to support it in running upon the water, for it never flies. Its plumage is grey, its bill and feet

yellow. When it is not shot dead, it continues its flight upon the surface as long as the least breath of life remains. Its flesh is oily, and has a fenny taste: it was eaten however by our ships companies when no bustards were given them. These ducks usually weigh at least between nineteen and twenty pounds each. We called them grey geese, to distinguish them from the kind which affords that fine down of which muffs are made. They are not better eating than the ducks; their flesh has even a disagreeable smell, which their oily skin retains a considerable time, though exposed to the air. This disgusting circumstance prevented our making a collection of them. They may probably be of the kind called *Cabuitabu du Para*.

The large feathers in their wings are of an iron grey; the small ones a mixture of green and gold, and vary their colour like those of a wild duck; the rest of their body is white. The articulation of the wing is armed with a spur as hard as horn, not very sharp, but rounded like a cone, and about half an inch long. Their bill and feet are black. The strokes they give with their wings in defending themselves, are accompanied with such force that they bruise the flesh where the blow lights. The bustards are likewise armed with a spur of the same kind. I received a blow upon my hand from one that was even mortally wounded with shot. I felt a very acute pain for a full quarter of an hour, and the mark of the bruise remained more than two days.

The wild Ducks, which are here very common, are like those of France, but not near so good; having, in general, the taste of muscles: but the Teal and the Divers, which are no less numerous, are excellent.

There are likewise found prodigious numbers of another species of Divers which are tolerably good, though they have rather an oily taste. Our seamen called them at first *Besfics*, and afterwards *Coyons* and *Nigauts*, because they suffered themselves to be killed with stones, not attempting to fly away unless they were hit. They assemble in flocks upon the rocks near the sea-coast, sometimes to the number of an hundred and upwards. When  
we



we went on shore in the sloop, several companies of them, consisting of two or three hundred, passed only eight or ten feet above our heads. There are three kinds of them; all nearly of the same size. Some are quite black; in others the fore-part of the neck and all the belly is white: in the third kind, the belly and breast is white, and the rest black. Their bill, which is of the same length as their head, is black and sharp, like that of birds which are not aquatic. Their feet are of a dark grey and webbed; but instead of four toes, they are only furnished with three, which differ in shape from those of other water-fowl. See the Plate. Our seamen preferred them to wild ducks; and indeed they had not near so disagreeable a taste.

Red-shanks and sea-pies are very good here; but the bustards in particular are exquisite, either boiled, roasted, or fricasseed. It appeared from the account we kept that we ate fifteen hundred. It is indeed hardly to be conceived, that the ship's company of our two frigates, consisting of an hundred and fifty men, all in perfect health, and with good stomachs, should have found a quantity of these birds sufficient for their subsistence during a stay of more than two months, within a tract of country not exceeding three leagues.

These are almost all the kinds of animals we saw in that part of the island where we fixed our encampment, except two or three kinds of small birds, some of which resemble the Siskin, others the linnet; and a kind of wagtail that has not so long a tail nor such darkish stripes as those of France. There is likewise found a kind of white gull, and a carnivorous bird of the size of a common hen, with reddish grey plumage. The people on board called them grey gulls. They came very near us, and, when we were in pursuit of game, flew so close to our heads that more than once they swept off the caps and hats of our people. They make a noise much like a duck; and though they are water-fowl their feet are not webbed; but they seize their prey voraciously, by means of the very sharp talons with which their toes are armed; and when their prey is either not large  
enough

enough to support upon the surface, or too heavy for them to carry off, they tear it in pieces with their beak and talons, flapping their wings all the time. They settle however upon the water, and remain upon it like ducks, but I never saw any of them dive. Nobody thought it worth while to shoot them, concluding they would be very bad eating.

A small heron with a crown is likewise found here, whose feathers are of an ash-coloured bluish grey: the crown is composed of three white feathers three inches long, resembling in shape the crown of the peacock. Upon the breast, round the neck, under the wings, on the lower part of the back, and under the thighs, there is a down, part white and part of a citron coloured yellow, at least an inch long, exactly resembling a piece of the finest raw silk.

In the second voyage we saw some paroquetes, and a kind of swan with a red bill, the whole neck being of a most beautiful black, and the rest of the plumage white.

The climate and the air appear to be so wholesome, that all the persons we left behind remained on the island of their own accord, and live under the same roof, in the apartments provided for them in the building erected near Fort St. Louis; where they will subsist as well by shooting, as on the provisions with which their magazine is plentifully stored for two years. One of the two Acadian families which we carried over consists of the husband, his wife, two children, one a boy three years and an half old, the other a girl about a year old, and of two young women, sisters of the mother, the eldest nineteen, and the youngest eighteen. The other family consists of the husband, his wife, who is pregnant and ready to lie in, a son four years old, and the mother's sister, a girl of sixteen.

There remain here all kinds of artificers, as smiths, iron-mongers, carpenters, joiners, masons, bricklayers, shoemakers, bakers, a captain of a ship, sailors, &c. The soil is very promising, and it is very probable that these artificers will make

M m

good



good use of the tools and seeds of all kinds that were left them, and that this colony will flourish, if the ministry make a point of improving it. Besides provisions, we left seven heifers and two young bulls, eight hogs and two boars, a few sheep, a goat, two horses and a mare, which range about the country.

We saw no kinds of reptiles or noxious insects here, only some small common flies, some small field spiders called *Spinners*. There is no kind of quadruped except the small wolf or fox I have mentioned. This will not be surprising if we recollect that travellers assure us, that no reptiles or insects are found in the southern part of Chili, which is pretty nearly in the same latitude with, and almost opposite to the Malouine Islands. See the chart of the coast which we made a survey of from our place of landing on the three islands, which we took at first to be the Sebalds, to the port or eastern bay where we anchored.

In the second and third voyages the ships, in returning from the straits of Magellan, sailed along the southern coast of these islands, as it will be described in the extract of the journals of M. Alexander Guyot, and M. de Bougainville; and they have made a chart of it, which is given in the plates.

On Tuesday the 10th of April, we perceived several whales and a great number of birds, among which were some Petterils, called *Damiers*, or chess-boards, on account of their plumage being chequered with black and white. The head and part of the neck, likewise the tip and middle of the wings, are black; the rest of the body is not white, though it appears to be so at the distance of pistol-shot. On a nearer view you find that the extremity of the wings is black; they have the appearance of round scales edged with black. It is of the size of a large pigeon. As we had now very fresh gales, the rolling was so constant and violent, that it was impossible to keep the dishes upon the table without holding them, and every person was obliged to have his plate in one hand and his fork in the other.

Notwith-

Notwithstanding every possible precaution, a soup-dish, some plates and drinking-glasses were broken at dinner. These rollings were so violent in the night-time, that those who did not lie in cots or hammocks, could not rest in their beds.

On the 11th, the same weather continued all the morning. In the afternoon we saw several birds and whales. We were still so excessively rocked with the rollings, that it was almost impossible to keep the deck. We saw a quantity of birds, and a very large whale, which accompanied the ship for a considerable time, at the distance of a musket-shot.

On the 14th, we saw a number of grey sea-mews, and some Quebrante-Uessos.

From the 14th to the 24th, nothing remarkable happened: but on this day, soon after seven in the morning, we saw a flying fish by some called *Adonis*, but for what reason I cannot say. There are several kinds of them. Some are distinguished by the colour, others by the length of their fins which serve them as wings. There is a third kind with four wings instead of two, which is the usual number. None of those we caught between the tropics had more than two wings, some of a larger, others of a smaller size. They were all of a fine deep blue, silvered over on the back to half the breadth of their body, and the whole belly was of a very bright blue, silvered over in the same manner. The largest of them which fell into our frigate was eight inches in length, including the head and tail. In some the wings were only two inches long, in others they extended as far as the tail.

Few animals have so many enemies as the flying fish. They spring out of the sea to escape being devoured by thunnies, bonitos, sharks, &c. and in the air meet with birds that are always upon the watch for them. They rise so high above the water that they strike against the sails and shrouds of ships into which they fall: and this is the only way of catching them. Their flesh is good and delicate. You see them spring out of



the water by hundreds like flocks of larks, at which time their wings make them appear white.

On the 25th in the morning, we passed the Tropic of Capricorn, and entered a calm and warm climate. Accordingly last Sunday, which was Easter-day, we all put on our lighter clothing.

On the 27th, we spied land before us, and steered N. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. then directed our course so as to pass within half a league of it. At half an hour past six we found by observation that this land was the island of Ascension, which appeared to us as described in the plate. We computed its distance at about six leagues. As we approached this island, it appeared to me to be composed of several rocks joined together, or of a single rock having different summits, between which there was a little earth or sand, covered here and there with some herbage, which gives a little verdure to the sloping declivity which runs down to the sea on the side towards the N. E. and E. N. E. At half an hour past nine, several of our people fancied they saw trees, but on taking an accurate view of the whole with perspective glasses, we concluded that what had the appearance of trees was nothing more than broom or shrubs. At the bottom of the declivity just now mentioned, you see a kind of sandy flat, slightly covered with verdure, upon the coast and to the N. N. E. of the island. At half an hour past eight, we were at two leagues distance or thereabouts.

At eight o'clock, we discovered another island to the E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. E. about six leagues from the island of Ascension; three small islands soon after appeared close to the last discovered one.

This island, with the islets about it, might probably be the same that some seamen passing too far eastward, and not seeing the island of Ascension, have called Trinity island; since many navigators pretend that the island of Ascension, and Trinity island are one and the same; at least an island, and three rocks or islets, are found E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. E. of that of Ascension, as they are laid down in the charts. This island of the

Trinity will then be the largest, or rather the largest of the four islets I have been describing. Indeed the latitude in which Trinity island is placed, and the latitude of Ascension, would not be found to coincide: but the charts, which are so faulty in placing other islands, may possibly be mistaken in the position of these. The largest of the islets, which I took for Trinity island, was seen by us at the distance of five leagues or thereabouts, but appeared less extensive than the island of Ascension, when observed at the same distance. The two islets, or rocks, at first view had greatly the appearance of ships under sail.

We passed between these two islands without altering our course; and saw nothing but steep rocks, several of which appeared almost perpendicular. We saw no inhabitants but sea-fowl. As we coasted so near the land, we should have seen some tortoises if there had been any in these islands. One of these animals, a foot or rather less at its longest diameter, passed alongside our frigate four days before: but we were then at too great a distance from these islands to think it probable that it came from thence.

On Sunday the 29th, in the morning, we saw some flying-fish, some birds called *Taylor Birds*, others called *Frigates*, and some Tropic birds, called *Paille-en-Cul*, or otherwise *Flèche-en-Cul* and *Fêtu-en-Cul*. The sailors, who name things according to their ideas, give the bird this name on account of the two feathers of its tail which are very long. Some of this kind, which hovered over our ship for a considerable time, appeared to be of the size of a pretty large red partridge. The Tropic bird has a small well-shaped head; its bill is about three inches long, pretty thick and strong, rather crooked, but pointed and red like its feet, which are webbed. The wings are very large in proportion to the body; and indeed this bird flies very well and to a great height. It makes excursions three or four hundred leagues from land, rests upon the water, and lives upon fish.

Its



Its plumage appears to be intirely white. Our seamen who have had a near view of it assure me, that it is variegated with white and blue. The tail consists of twelve or fifteen feathers from five to six inches long. The two middle ones, which are from fifteen to eighteen, are joined in such a manner that they appear to be one.

Some of our officers who had been at the island of Mauritius, or the isle of France, communicated to me a singular observation they made there, that the Tropic birds never appeared in the port of that island, except on the very day, or about twelve hours before the arrival of some French vessel. Accordingly, when one of these birds is seen, the inhabitants are in a manner certain that a ship will come into port soon after.

On the 4th, 5th, and 6th, we saw many flying fish; and on the 8th, a great number of porpoises passed very near our vessel; we endeavoured to harpoon them, but without success.

On Thursday the 10th, in the evening, we caught a shark, saw a quantity of porpoises, some thunnies, and several bonitos.

On Friday the 11th, at six in the morning, we caught a shark. We attempted to catch some thunnies with the loss of two hooks, which were thicker than the barrel of a goose-quill. One of these thunnies broke two of them which were fastened to the same line. The bonitos would not bite.

On the 12th, we caught one porpoise among a prodigious number, and a shark; at three o'clock we caught a bonito, in the belly of which was found a fish called *Cornet*, which it had probably just then swallowed, as it was still intire, and preserved its natural colours. I immediately made a drawing of it, represented in the plate.

The reader must not form his idea of the size of this fish from the figure I have given of it. In the opinion of the seamen who frequent the South Sea, the *Cornet* is the largest of all sea-fish. It seizes its prey by the assistance of the moveable claws at the end of its snout. These seamen likewise tell us, that fastening upon, and catching hold of ships with these

claws, it climbs along the tackling: that if it does this in the night-time unperceived, its enormous weight throws the ship so much upon her side that she is in danger of being overset. They accordingly take great care to keep a good look-out, with hatchets, and other sharp instruments to cut the claws of this fish, as soon as they see them fastened upon the ship. Our captain, and his brother Alexander Guyot, who have made several voyages in the South Sea, confirm this account; but add, that they never saw any of such an immoderate size, that they have tasted some that weighed an hundred and fifty pounds, and had an excellent flavour. If one may judge of them by the small one described in the plate, they must be very delicate. The scales of this fish, which are a kind of sheath to it, as well as the fish itself, were almost transparent.

On Sunday the 13th, we continued to see a great number of porpoises all the morning, and a large shark which would not take the bait.

On the morning of the 14th, we saw several bonitos, thunnies, and a great number of flying fish, several of which falling into the ship made an excellent dish for dinner.

On the 15th, about four o'clock, we caught two thunnies, and two bonitos with the harpoon.

The thunny is a fish well known in the Mediterranean. But whether the description which M. Valmont de Bomare gives of it, in his dictionary of natural history written on the plan of Lemery's, is not exact; or whether the fish whose figure I give in the plate is not the thunny, or whether the thunny caught between the tropics differs from that of the Mediterranean, it does not agree with M. Valmont's description. In those we caught, the scales are neither large nor broad, nor the back of a blackish cast, but of a fine deep blue, which brightens insensibly towards the fins, which are shaped like scythes, and placed near the gills. These two fins, as well as the two smaller at the bottom of the belly, are of a very deep grey, or bluish black inclining to grey. That on the back, and the two on the belly, situated.



situated at about two-thirds of the length of the body, are of a gold colour, as well as some parts resembling the teeth of a saw and extending from the fins to the tail, which is arched. On the outside, their gills do not appear to be double. Their snout, which is not thick, is pointed, and has small teeth that are very sharp. M. Valmont says, that this fish dies soon after it is out of the water. That which I delineated, lived near half an hour hung up by the tail near the main-mast. It would probably have lived much longer, if, by struggling to disengage itself, it had not disgorged its heart, which fell upon deck in my presence, and on taking it into my hand continued its palpitation near a quarter of an hour. In voiding it, it discharged a great quantity of blood through its gullet, some drops of which I have represented upon the surface of the lower jaw. Its flesh is something like veal; but drier and more firm.

The bonito is a large fish: its figure from the head to three-fourths of its length is round; from thence it begins to grow flatter, and terminates in a pretty thick tail, which is forked, and like that of other fishes. As it has little or no neck, it has two fins which are pretty long, but not broad in proportion to the bulk of the bonito. On the back is a fin, which, as it approaches towards the tail, seems to form there, as well as on the opposite part under the belly, triangular projections of a gold colour. On each side are placed two other fins of a blue colour, terminating in a point at the tail. Two small fins appear under the belly. The back is of a very deep blue, which grows brighter towards the middle of the body. The belly is white with a cast of greenish yellow, and is variegated with several stripes of a greyish colour, which seem to be blended together promiscuously. The eye is large, and has a circle of gold round the pupil. Its head is not so long as that of the thunny. It is necessary to lard it well, as its flesh is very dry. See the plate.

These fish always appear in shoals; the sea sometimes seems to be intirely covered with them. They are caught with the spear, or a hook baited with an artificial flying-fish. The flesh  
of

of the bonito, which is taken on the coasts of the kingdom of Angola, is said to be hurtful. In the middle of the flesh of some we found some live worms. They were white, of the thickness of the barrel of the feathers in a hen's wing, and about four lines in length.

On the evening of the 25th, we again met with some sea-grass, which the seamen call *Goemon à grappes de raisin*. I have already observed, that the seeds with which it abounds are small bladders, of the size of the largest swan-shot. They are not collected into separate clusters, but dispersed over the stems and branches. When the seeds grow dry, they dwindle to the size of a middling pin's head. The leaves which are very small, almost like those of parsley piert, become brittle. Some of the stems, and a great number of the seeds, are incrustated with a very small kind of shell, or spawn of fish, which is white and hard, and when rubbed against wood acts as a file, or the herb called shave-grass.

On the 26th, in the morning, we saw such a prodigious quantity of the sea-grass I have been speaking of, that the sea was almost covered with it. Among some large bundles of it, we found crabs of different sizes, of a bright red, marked with brown spots. They have eight feet, and two claws. The body, or cuirass, is almost square on the side of the head. The eyes project from the extremity of the two angles that form this square. See the plate.

Several beds of this sea-grass, some of which were almost as broad as our vessel, and longer, passed close to our frigate. They are said to come from the coasts of the Canary Islands; others pretend that they are dislodged from the bottom of the sea. This opinion seems to be the most probable, since all the Canary Islands could hardly produce the prodigious quantity which appeared for fourteen or fifteen days past.

On the 31st, in the morning, being Ascension-day, the weather being calm, after saying mass we seized this opportunity of scraping and breaming the vessel. At four in the afternoon we



saw a sail which seemed to be steering W. N. W. at the distance of about six leagues. We lost sight of it at night.

On Sunday, the 3d of June, the sea-grass, which had not been seen for a day or two, appeared again in large quantities, and a whale of middle size played round the ship a quarter of an hour, at the distance of gun-shot.

A few days after we saw a bird, which our seamen call *Equéret*, and another called the tailor-bird hovered about our vessel.

On the 13th, we caught a fish with our drag-net called *Grande Oreille*. It resembles the bonito in every particular except the two fins, which are situated near the gills. These fins are falciform, and are at least as large as those of the thunny. Its flesh is not so dry.

On the 15th, at five in the morning, we discovered a sail bearing N. W. of us, which appeared to steer the same course. Upon this we clued up our sails, hoisted our flag and broad-pondant, and made a signal by firing a gun. After sailing as near the wind as possible, in order to wait for her, she likewise hauled the wind, and continued at two cannon-shot or thereabouts to windward. Concluding that they did not hear the first gun, we fired another to windward; when they displayed a flag of peace, and fired a gun. Perceiving afterwards that they took no further notice, we hoisted the ensign with a waft; which she equally disregarded, and always kept to windward nearly at the same distance. As she sailed at least as well as our ship, she doubtless depended upon her sailing. We resolved to give over the chase, as it would have diverted us from our course.

The French Captain could not make any proper excuse for disobeying the King's regulations respecting the marine, by which every ship belonging to the nation is obliged to bring to, when a King's ship gives the signal by firing a gun, and hoisting the broad-pondant on the proper mast, according to the rank of the commander. We went still farther, by hoisting the ensign with a waft, which is a signal of distress agreed upon by all civilized nations.

This

This proceeding therefore, for this reason at least, deserves the highest censure; and sets a very bad precedent. Had we unfortunately been in actual danger, he would have suffered us to perish before his eyes, without giving us that assistance which the laws of humanity require in such circumstances.

The royal navy has ever been jealous of the trading branch. The former entertains prejudices which set it above the seamen's employment, and does not think practice necessary to attain a knowledge of it. The latter, inured to the hardships and fatigues of sea, justly concludes that to excel in the nautic art, requires the practice of a whole life. Hence that party-spirit of which the state becomes the first victim, since the liberty of the Reds, or officers of the royal navy, occasions the servitude of the Blues. If we look into the annals of the last war, we shall find French privateers whose courage and intrepidity seemed to rouse the winds to fight on their side. Could it be believed that a Captain of a vessel (M. de L.) was a calm spectator of an engagement between a French snow and an English privateer, and contented himself with commending the conduct of the Frenchman, who, attentive to every particular, exerted every effort of skill and personal bravery, to prevent the enemy from boarding him. In short he saw her dismasted, and obliged to strike, without firing a gun in her defence. How easy was it for the Commander of a ship of the line well armed to save the brave Captain of the merchantman, and to make himself master of the English privateer! It is plain then that he remained inactive only because it is not the mode to waste any powder to promote the commerce of the nation, or protect a privateer belonging to a good citizen.

It may be urged, in excuse for the conduct of the Captain of the French trading vessel, in not bringing to even when we hoisted our flag of distress, that having probably no more provisions and rigging than were sufficient for his own use, he apprehended that, if we should happen to be in want of them, we should seize his stores by force, if he refused to grant us a voluntary supply. This is an abuse too common in the royal navy, and



has given much offence to the trading branch : which, finding itself despised and ill-treated, is glad of every opportunity to retaliate ; and I dare say would take some kind of pleasure in their destruction, in hopes of being released by it from the tyranny they experience from the royal navy. It would be for the interest of the state if matters were so precisely regulated by the royal authority, that no person of either party should transgress the order on any pretence whatsoever, but should be punished with the utmost severity. While this animosity, perpetuated by the contempt which the royal navy expresses for the trading branch, and by the abuse of its power, continues to subsist between these two bodies of men, the state must unavoidably be exposed to very great inconveniencies.

We are not disposed to follow the example of others, nor is any one inclined to follow ours. This spirit of singularity, which runs through all our conduct, always tends to our destruction. We imitate the Romans, who employed only their freedmen in maritime affairs, and confined the land service to the patricians. The English have better notions : among them the profession of a sailor is in great esteem ; and is the noblest of all the arts, because it is exercised by the principal nobility in the kingdom. The French indeed differ from the Romans, not for the sake of imitating the English, but in order to gratify a number of interested individuals, whose opinion very improperly passes for that of the nation. In France the art of navigation is esteemed a vulgar employment, though the command of ships of the line is a post of honour which can only be filled by a person who is actually a man of some family. Accordingly there is more parade than science or connection in our navy ; there is more shew than real skill in our officers, and at the same time their emoluments are not adequate to their expences. In London, the idea of merit and reward is not regulated by fashion and court-influence, but by the good of the state. Nothing is regarded but merit in a sailor whatever his condition may be. If he is a good seaman he is every thing, he is considered as a useful man, is employed  
in

in honourable stations, and is rewarded in proportion to his services. It were much to be wished that we would think, or rather act, in the same manner. Virtue and merit ought to be the foundation of true nobility.

This is the source of that spirit of party which is a disgrace to the Reds, an injury to the Blues, and the misfortune of the French government.

The reader, I am persuaded, will excuse this digression, as it is dictated solely by my zeal for the public good, and the love I bear my country. It is certain, notwithstanding the rivalry subsisting between the two nations, that an English Commander would have been so far from acting like the French Captain, that he would have made what haste he could to join us, and to give us all the assistance in his power: which conduct ever ought to be observed between all nations without distinction. We went up to and offered our assistance to the Captain of a Dutch vessel, we had met in October last, which had lost her masts.

On the 16th we saw several whales, and a kind of thornback, which our seamen call *Rouet*. We kept sight of the French ship before mentioned both yesterday and to-day: it continued the same course from the E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. E. at the distance of about three leagues from us, and we had proceeded about as far in our course.

On the 18th, at half past five in the morning, we spied a sail coming from the Eastward. At eight it came abreast of us, and we spoke with it. It was the St. Paul de Grandville, Captain Desveau, bound to Newfoundland.

On the 20th and 22d we saw several ships; and on Sunday evening the 24th we steered S. E.  $\frac{1}{4}$  E. with a gentle breeze from N. N. W. to W. N. W. in order to observe the land, which we saw at six in the evening.

On Monday morning, the 25th, we heard the clocks of St. Paul de Leon at seven, being N. and S. of the Isle de Bas; we hoisted our flag, and fired a gun for a boat to come:



to us, which soon arrived, and carried Messrs. de Bougainville and l'Huillier de la Serre to Morlaix. The frigate proceeded to St. Malo. At eleven at night we dropt an anchor opposite the tower of Cape Frehel, the beacon being about a league N. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  W. of us.

On the 26th, at half past three in the morning, we got under sail, and about seven came to our moorings in Solidor, where the vessel was discharged. M. de Bougainville having given the King an account of our expedition, his Majesty ratified the taking possession of the Malouine Islands, and immediately issued orders for the Eagle to be got ready to return to these islands.

OBSERVATIONS

## OBSERVATIONS

ON THE

STREIGHTS of MAGELLAN,

AND ON THE

PATAGONIANS.

**T**HE King of France having approved of the possession we had taken in his name of all the Malouine Islands, the ministry issued out orders for the support and improvement of the little establishment we had formed there. The Eagle frigate was again fitted out, and M. Alexander Duclos Guyot, who had been second captain in the first voyage, was made first captain in the second, with the brevet of lieutenant of a frigate, under the command of M. de Bougainville. Being informed of M. Duclos's safe return to St. Malo, and desirous of knowing in what state he had left the new colony, and what discoveries he might have made in the Straights of Magellan, I wrote to him to beg he would inform me of these particulars; and received the following answer:

“ I waited to know what service I should be appointed to, before I did myself the honour of answering your letter; and therefore begin by acquainting you, that we shall set out from hence on the 10th or 15th instant, for the Malouine Islands. But I shall first put into the Madeiras, to take in wine, and other refreshments. From thence I shall proceed to Port Desire, on the Patagonian coast, to take a view of the country; and then go on to our colony, where after having unladen my provisions, and landed all my passengers, I shall return to the Straights



Streights of Magellan, to fetch a cargo of wood ; after which I shall wait for fresh orders from France. This is my destination: M. de la Gyraudais sets out from Rochfort, with a frigate laden with provisions necessary for the colony.

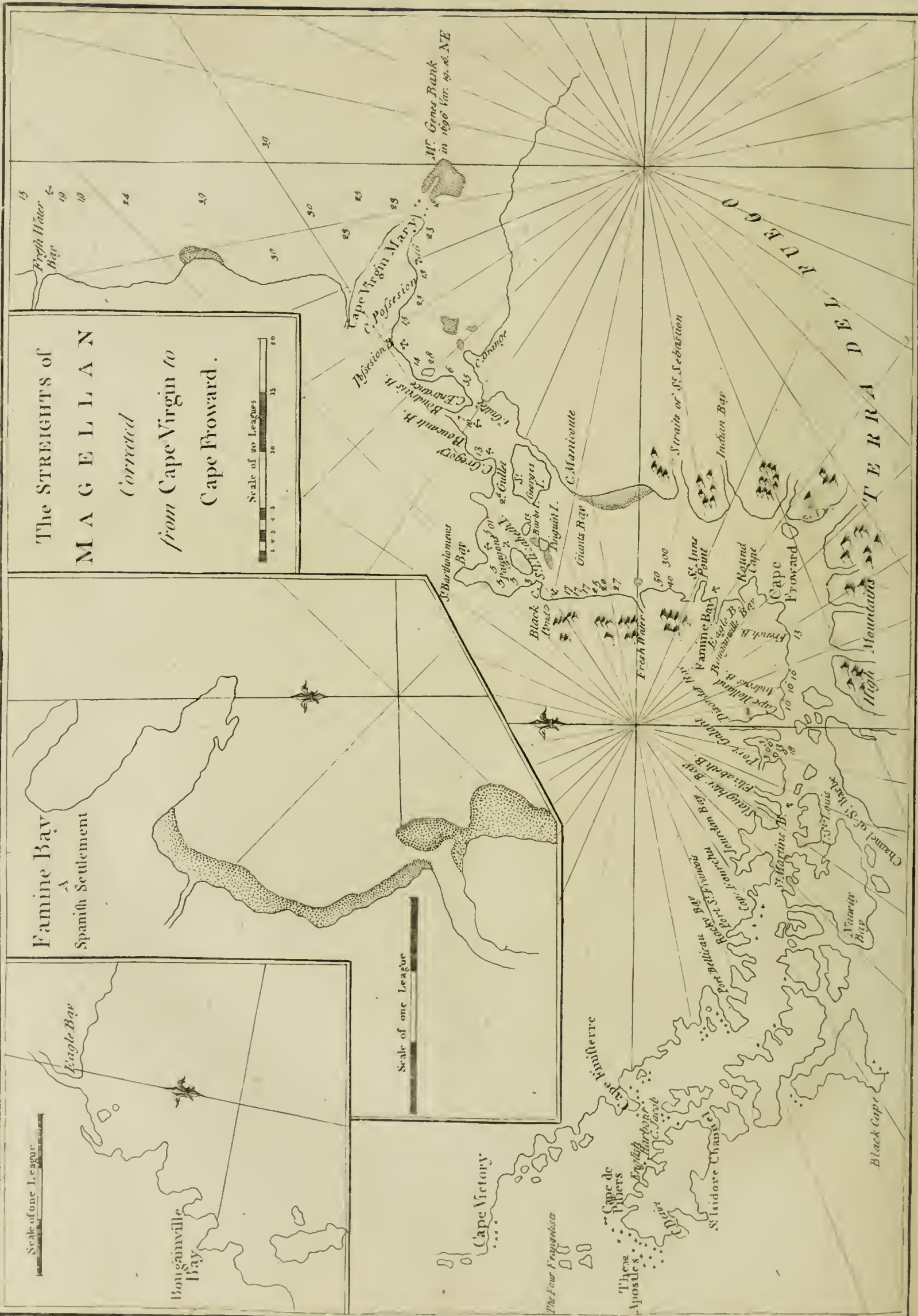
You desire an account of my last voyage, which I shall now give you. We set out from St. Malo on the 5th of October 1765. We had in all on board the Eagle frigate 116 men, 53 of which were workmen, or officers going as passengers to the colony. Among the latter were M. de Perriers, a half-pay captain of the regiment of la Sare; M. Thibé de Belcourt, a half-pay captain of the regiment Dauphin; M. Denis de St. Simon, captain adjutant of the colonies; M. l'Huillier de la Serre, geographical engineer; M. de Romainville, lieutenant of infantry and engineer.

For the first fortnight, we had bad weather and contrary winds. On Sunday the 5th of November, we had a prospect of the Cape Verd Islands. On Monday we passed by the islands of Fogo and Bravo. We did not meet with much storm in crossing the line, any more than under the tropics; and on Saturday the 16th of December, we came within sight of the coast of Brazil, in 31 degrees 30 minutes South latitude, though we thought ourselves, as it commonly happens, still wide of it, from a defect in the charts, which you know throw this coast too far back westward.

We stayed afterwards some time searching for Pepy's island, where it is marked in the charts, and in the neighbourhood, without being able to find it. On Thursday the 3d of January, we had a prospect of the Malouine Islands, and made to land at the Islet, which in our first voyage we called *la Conchée*. On Saturday the fifth instant, we sailed in, and cast anchor at the distance of half a mile from the mouth of the small bay of the colony; where we found every body in good health. We continued unloading till the first of February, when we were ready to set sail. On Sunday the 27th, we had discovered three vessels coming from the West. On the 2d of February, seeing that they







they did not come into the bay, we set sail for the Streights of Magellan. The weather was rather changeable during our passage. On Tuesday the 12th of February, we had a prospect of Cape Lookout, on the Patagonian coast. After having tacked about, we found ourselves within cannon shot of a lurking rock as large as our longboat, which we had a great deal of trouble to get clear of, on account of the currents, and the roughness of the sea. This rock is not pointed out in our charts. On Saturday the 16th we observed three vessels steering the same course that we did. On the 17th we entered the Streights of Magellan, together with the three ships. On Monday the 18th, one of the three ships working to windward while we were at anchor, she struck on a sand bank. The weather was very fine. We sent our boats to her assistance, with an officer, with anchors and cables; but she soon disengaged herself, and got off without injury. We then found out that they were English\*.

On

\* This was in reality Commodore Byron's small squadron. The fact is told in the printed account of his voyage round the world, in the following terms: "At four in the afternoon, the master of the storeship (*the Florida*) came on board the *Dolphin*, bringing a packet from the Lords of the Admiralty to the Commodore.—He had likewise been several days in search of Pepys's island, but was like us obliged to desist.—To our great surprize in the morning of the second day, after we left the harbour in company with the *Tamer* and storeship, we discovered a strange sail, which indeed put us into no small consternation. The Commodore was inclined to believe, that this ship was a Spanish man of war of the line, who having got intelligence of our voyage, was come to intercept us; and in consequence of that surmise, boldly gave orders, that all on board the *Dolphin* and *Tamer* should prepare for a warm reception, by firing all our guns, and then boarding her from both ships; but while we were bringing to, and waiting for her, we found it grew dark, and we soon lost sight of her till the next morning, when we saw her at anchor, at three leagues distance, and therefore continued sailing towards Port Famine. We however found that she still followed us, though at a great distance, and even came to an anchor when we did. On the 20th we were chiefly employed in getting up our guns; we soon got fourteen upon the deck, and then came to an anchor, having the *Tamer* astern, with a spring on our cable.

Thus busily were we employed in taking all the measures prudence could suggest, to defend us from an imaginary danger; when an unlucky accident, which happened to the storeship, shewed that we had nothing to fear, and that the vessel, against which we were arming ourselves, ought not to be considered as an



On Wednesday the 20th, the English anchored in Port Famine, and we sailed on till the 21st, when we cast anchor at the distance of five leagues from the English, and called the place the Eagle's bay, as it has no name on the charts. The next day, being the 22d, M. de Bougainville discovering a very fine bay or port, at the distance of one league and a half to the South, we went there and fastened the ship to four trees very much under shelter, at the distance of a league from the French bay. We called it Bougainville bay. We took in some very fine wood here and shipped it conveniently, by hauling on board with a hawser the wood cut upon the shore. We stayed here till the 16th of March, it being all the time very fine weather. On the 25th of February, two English vessels, going to the South Seas, passed by us. On the 16th of March in the morning, after having left a French flag, hoisted upon a hut, and several cloaths, kettles, hatchets, and other utensils necessary for the savages, we set sail. After having gone a league a calm came on, and we cast our anchor in Eagle's bay. On the 17th it being calm, M. de Bougainville met some of the savages as he was out a shooting. He went up to them, and they appeared very gentle. On Tuesday the 19th we set sail again; and on the 20th in the morning, the wind being against us, we anchored in Port Famine. On the 21st in the morning, some of the savages calling out to us, we went up to them. They expressed a great desire of coming on board: we therefore took six of them along with us, whom we entertained, and who did not appear to be much surprized. They are a set of men much like

enemy; for while the storeship was working to the windward, she took the shore on a bank about two leagues from our ship. About the same time, the strange ship came up with her, cast anchor, and immediately began to hoist out her long-boats, to give her assistance. But before they had come to the storeship, our own boats had boarded her, and the commanding officer had received orders not to let them come on board, but to thank them in the politest manner for their intended assistance. We afterwards found this to be a French vessel; and having no guns that we could see, supposed it to be a merchantman, who had come to those parts for wood and water.—On the 21st we got into Port Famine, where we moored our ships."

like the Indians of Montevideo, having no other dress than the skins of Sea-Wolves, Guanacoes, and Vicunas; they appear very poor, have no taste for wine, but are very fond of fat. We dressed them in red cloaths, and gave them several necessary domestic utensils; we then accompanied them to land; crying out all the way *Vive le Roi de France*, which they repeated after us very well. We left a flag displayed. They expressed much good-will towards us, giving us their bows and arrows. When we saw them they were painted white, and in spots, but as soon as we had given them some red lead, not cinnabar vermilion, they immediately painted themselves with it; and seemed to be fond of this colour. As we were returning to the ship, they saluted us with *Vive le Roi* in French, having remembered that expression; and then they hollowed after their own manner, standing all round the flag. As we got farther from them, they raised their shouts, and increased their fires.

This is nearly all I can tell you of these inhabitants of Patagonia. We did not land on the Terra del Fuego. I believe these are nearly the same kind of people as those who cross the Straights, in their canoes made of the bark of a tree. The first time we saw them, they had kinds of hatchets; but they took care to conceal them afterwards, as well as their wives and children.

At length, on Saturday the 23d of March, we sailed out of that famous strait so much dreaded, after having experienced there, as well as in other places, that it was very fine and very warm; and that three-fourths of the time the sea was perfectly calm.

It is remarkable that the sea ebbs as it enters on the northern side: we had a proof of this every day: in the middle the currents are distinguishable, but in the narrowest parts of the entrance they are very strong; they run at least two leagues and a half, and sink about four fathoms.

There is no wood at the entrance of the Straights, neither on one side nor the other. There are nothing but immense plains.



About four and twenty leagues up the country, both on the coast of Patagonia, and on the Terra del Fuego, the woods begin. We found very little game, and that much followed by the natives, very little fish, and in the places where we had been, none of those beautiful shell fish so much admired.

At length we steered our course in order to pass to the South of the Danicant islands. On Tuesday the 26th, we came within sight of land, which was the country to the West of the Malouine Islands, about fourscore leagues distant from Cape Virgin, which forms the entrance of the Streights. We afterwards sailed fifty leagues to come back to cast anchor in the port; so that we may reckon that we had passed by fifty leagues of the coast to the southward, which is not however its greatest length, as there is a strait which divides the North and South lands without any woods. On the 29th of March we cast anchor in the same place where we did before, having almost always had fine weather. We unladed our wood, and on the 27th of April we set sail for France, leaving 79 persons in the Malouine Islands. Our passage was rather tedious, by reason of the calm weather which obliged us to put into harbour, on account of the few provisions we had remaining, having left as many as we could behind us. On the 18th of July we put into the harbour at Angra in the island of Tercera, where we supplied ourselves with plenty of every thing, having found there all we wanted. On the 25th we left this harbour, and on the 13th of August arrived at St. Malo.

I am, SIR,

St. Malo,  
1st September, 1765.

Your very humble Servant,

ALEXANDER DUCLOS GUYOT.

I was

I was not at Paris when M. de Bougainville returned, being gone to Montbrison in Forez. He sent me the following letter, which M. de Bougainville de Nerville his cousin, who was left commander at the Malouine Islands, had commissioned him to deliver to me. It was accompanied with a letter from him, which I shall give at the end of this.

If I had thought, Sir, you would have had the complaisance to go and keep my mother company in her solitude, I should not have omitted mentioning you to her, and desiring that favour of you. She says so many handsome things of you, and you speak so well of her, that I have reason to conclude you equally satisfied with each other. I am very glad to find that her company is so agreeable to you, and at the same time am much flattered in thinking myself sometimes the subject of your conversation.

I shall now say something to you about our situation. I have nothing particular to tell you about the winter we passed here. It has not been severe; for there never was snow enough to cover one's shoe-buckles, nor a sufficient depth of ice to support a stone as big as one's fist: and if it had not been for the rain, which runs through our tents as through a sieve, we should have had very little occasion for fire, which we were now obliged to make in order to dry ourselves. You would not have known our colony again had you returned with M. de Bougainville. In the first place you would have found us all very fat, the air being very healthy. You would have found all along the place where we live a fine walk of smooth even ground, and upwards of twenty feet wide; a new magazine raised again upon the border of the sea; a fort completely repaired placed on a level; with platforms made with flat stones under the cannons; a new powder magazine, a bakehouse, and a forge. By the account we kept, we killed above 1500 bustards in the season; for there is a time when they leave this country and go away to other parts, except a few straggling pairs whose eggs we never could find; but only their young ones which were always fix in number.



One brood of these was brought me, and was taken care of by one of our hens as her own. I was in hopes of sending them to France, but since my cousin's arrival here, they have experienced a number of evils, and have at length all perished by the mischievous tricks of the ship-boys who came to land: so that I must put this off till another season. We have made the discovery of a bird much more beautiful than the bustard, which is a kind of swan, as large and as white, but whose neck is as black as jet, and his bill red. We have not been able to kill any of them, as they are extremely wild. By other discoveries which I have made in the island more than twenty leagues to the West, it appears that the part we dwell in is detached from other adjacent islands, or joined only by an Isthmus. We may perhaps come at the true knowledge of this by means of the schooner which is to be left with us. The study of natural history, which we have not neglected, has furnished us with several of those conchæ called *Poulettes*, or *Gueule de Raye*.

There are few of those you sent me the drawings of to be found in good preservation. The Patellæ, you know, are common here. We have great expectation from our agriculture, our kitchen-garden having succeeded very well. With regard to the corn, it produced in the dry land some beautiful ears; but they were fine only in appearance, having no grain within them. Our lands having been yet unsown require a longer time for cultivation, and must even be improved with good dung. We have not a sufficient quantity of beasts to make any trials with them. Four of our heifers and our three horses are always in the open field; and we have never been able to catch them again, but their wandering disposition has made us acquainted with one of the great advantages of this country: which is, that cattle may remain in all seasons, day and night, in the open fields, without being in want of either pasture or litter. We often meet with one or other of them when we go out a shooting; they are as fat as hogs, and their liberty seems to agree very well with them. I return you many thanks for

the trouble you have taken in executing my commissions, and have received the things. I am making up a chest of the shells, seeds, and stones of this country; if you happen to be in the way when my cousin arrives he will shew them to you. They say you have put a shell into the cabinet of the Abbé of St. Germain, which is the only one of its kind. If that shell has been found here, be so kind as to send me a drawing of it.

From the Malouine Islands,  
23th of April 1765.

DE NERVILLE.

The following is M. de Bougainville's letter.

I am at last returned, my dear fellow-traveller. At my arrival I found I should not be able to see you, which gives me a great deal of concern. Be assured that no one interests himself more than I do in every thing that concerns you; and that I would have given any thing in the world, if you would have accompanied me in the second voyage. We have made an alliance with the Patagonians, who have been so ill spoken of, and we have found them neither taller, nor even so wicked as other men. I send you a letter from my cousin, who has behaved admirably well. None of our people have ever been seized with a fever. The winter has neither been severe nor long, and the establishment succeeds very well. I brought them this year my ship full of the finest wood in the world, which I had from my friends the Patagonians. I have not at present time to enter into any more particulars, having not a moment to lose. I believe I am going to be sent into Spain, to settle some things with that Court relative to our new establishment. I beg you would let me hear from you,

Paris,  
August 26, 1765.

and am, &c.

DE BOUGAINVILLE.

M. de



M. de Bougainville was sent into Spain and settled matters between that Court and the Court of France, respecting the cession which the latter made to the Spanish of the Malouine Islands; and M. de Bougainville set out from Nantz in 1766, on board a French frigate, and went to Buenos Ayres, taking a Spanish Governor from thence, and some troops of the same nation, to put them in possession of the aforesaid islands. Before he went away, he communicated to me the observations he had made on the Streights of Magellan, together with a correct chart of these Streights, which is among the plates, as well as a chart of the East, North, and South coasts of the Malouine Islands, which they had passed by in going and coming back through these Streights. By this chart, one can judge only of the extent of the Malouine Islands to the North and South, the western part not having yet been discovered. The English who settled themselves in 1765 at Port Egmont, situated more to the West than the French establishment, may hereafter give us some informations with regard to those parts yet unknown.

M. Alexander Duclos Guyot, and M. Chenard de la Gyraudais, having communicated to me the journals of their voyage they made together to the Streights of Magellan in 1766, with leave to make extracts from them; I have thought necessary to give these to the public, as well on account of the useful observations they contain relative to currents, the nature of the sea, and the coasts which form the Streights, as to settle the doubts of many learned men and others, upon the real existence of the Patagonian giants.

Extract of the journal of M. Alexander Duclos Guyot, Lieutenant of a frigate, on board the Eagle frigate, in the Streights of Magellan, in 1766.

On the 24th of April, we set sail from Acarron bay at the Malouine Islands. On the 26th, one of the Sebald islands that  
lies

lies most to the North West, bore S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. of us, distance 40 miles.

On the 28th in the morning, we saw a great quantity of whales and pinguins. At noon Cape las Barréras bore West of us nine leagues.

On the first of May, at half an hour past seven, we steered W. S. W. in order to have a view of the land of Patagonia. At nine o'clock, bearing round the bank which is at the entrance of the Streights of Magellan, the sea was changed, its waters being like those of a river made muddy by rains.

On Saturday the 3d of May, at eight o'clock, Cape Virgin bore N. N.  $\frac{1}{4}$  N. W. three leagues and a half, or four leagues. The most western part of the Terra del Fuego S. W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. Cape Santo Spirito S. S. E. Cape Possession W.  $\frac{1}{4}$  S. W. I think there are not less than seven leagues from one point of land to another at the entrance of the Streights.

On Sunday the 4th, at break of day, we were about four leagues S. E. of Cape Possession. There is a ridge of rocks and a sand bank near Cape Orange. It extends a great way, so we were obliged to coast the land of Patagonia. Here we saw a fire upon the shore, and drawing nearer to it perceived some men on horseback, and many others on foot. When we came opposite to them, they called out to us, but we did not understand their language. We answered them with shouts, and hoisted our flag. Five of them followed us about two leagues round the coast, but night coming on we lost sight of them. They seemed to be good horsemen, managing their horses well, which were very active.

We hardly perceived any currents in the narrows, where it was almost a calm. This entrance in its narrowest part is a full league over. At five o'clock in the evening, we anchored in Boucaut bay, in nine fathoms and a half water, with a bottom of rotten shells.



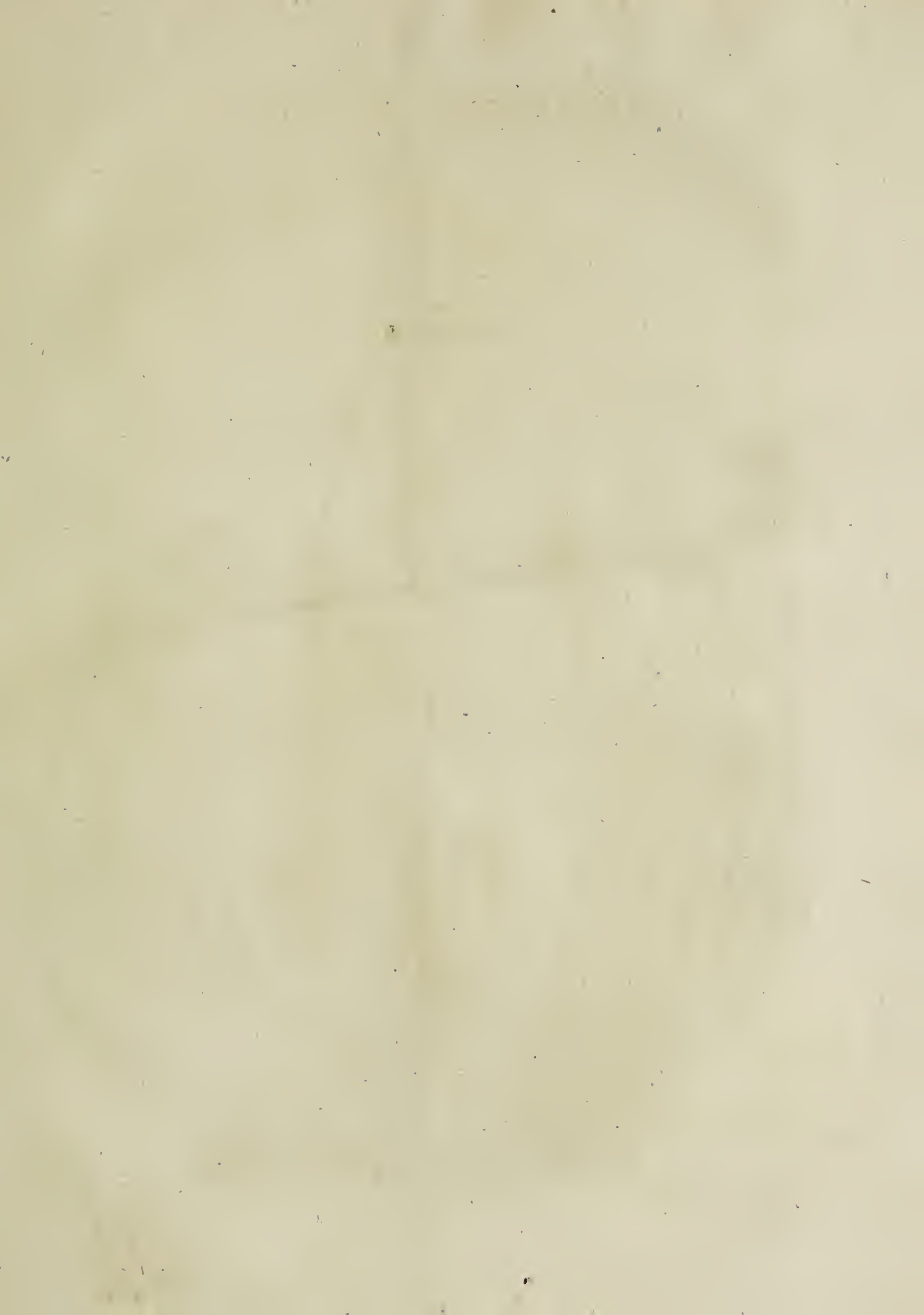
## REMARKS on the TIDES.

**I**N the last voyage, I had observed, when we came into the first narrows, that the tide was coming in, and I reckoned it was the beginning of flood. I did not however perceive on the shore that the sea rose considerably; at which I was the more surprised, as all sailors agree in saying that it does; neither was the shore wet, as it generally is when the sea retires. On coming out we were two hours and three quarters making seven or eight knots, without getting on half a league. When the current diminished, and we had sailed half-way up the Streight, I perceived on its banks that the water had just fallen at least four fathoms perpendicular. This observation induced me to imagine that when it is flood the sea goes out on the northern side; but on the contrary, when it is ebb, it comes in, and bears to the South.

When we went along Cape Orange, we perceived a very extensive flat sandy shore, which we took for the open sea at coming in, being concealed, as all the ridges and banks of Cape Orange are, which we could not see. This confirms me in my opinion, which is contrary to the sentiments of all those who have sailed in these Streights before me. This day the tide was coming out, and was against us for some time; nevertheless the tide was very high when it began to bear to the South.

Then all the banks and ridges were concealed, as well as the flat strands and shores which we had seen wet when we came out. I observed, that the tide bore in till nine o'clock. The sea had then fallen four feet perpendicular: afterwards coming out again it rose three fathoms; then there was a little interval without any stream, notwithstanding which it still rose one fathom: afterwards the sea took its course again, when it neither rose nor fell while we went two-thirds of a league in an hour.

It







*The Patagonians.*



It afterwards fell without any current; which made me think the currents were not regular; and that in bays, the turn of the tide is caused by the swell. I suspend the determination of this point, till it is confirmed by farther observations.

We perceived about three o'clock in the afternoon, that the sea began to enter into the narrows, the Moon being 26 days old; which would make the situation of the narrows E. and W. so that it would be high water there at twelve minutes past six o'clock on the day of new and full moon.

On Tuesday the 6th, the savages appeared about nine o'clock in the morning, and were kindling a fire on the shore by the small river Baudran. We hoisted our flag, and M. de la Gyraudais his broad pendant. Afterwards we both put our yawl and longboat to sea with men armed with muskets and cutlasses. In M. de la Gyraudais's longboat was an officer with presents for the savages. In my yawl, we had seven sailors and three officers under the command of my brother. At eleven o'clock we saw them land, and some men on horseback who received them; which appeared to me a good omen of peace. Nothing particular happened till twelve o'clock.

My brothers account was, that the savages, who are natives of this country, were not the same as those we saw last year in Savage bay, and that they spoke a different language. There were six men and one woman who had but six horses, each guarded by a dog who never leaves them.

They received our people very well, coming up to them to shew them where they should put into the shore and land. They did not appear surprised nor shew the least sign of emotion. We measured the shortest of them, and my brother found him 5 feet 7 inches high French measure. The rest were considerably taller. They were covered with the skins of deer, guanacoes, vicunas, otters, and other animals. Their arms are round stones, whose ends are lengthened out and pointed. The round part is fixed to the end of a string composed of several narrow straps, twisted and interwoven into a round form like



the string of a clock, and making a kind of sling. At the other end of the string is another stone in form of a pear, not more than half as big as the other, and appearing as if it was wrapt up in a bladder.

They use these weapons chiefly to catch animals; at which sport they are very dextrous, as they shewed our people by an experiment made in their presence. They have also other slings nearly of the same kind of construction. They manage their horses with great dexterity, and have a kind of saddle, very much like that we use for packhorses. These saddles are made with two pieces of wood, covered with leather and stuffed with straw. The bit of the bridle is a small stick, and the reins are twisted as the strings of their slings. They wear a kind of buskins or half boots, of skin with the shag on, and two pieces of wood fitted to each side of the heel, joined together in a point, which serve them for spurs. Their breeches are very short drawers, much resembling those of the savages of Canada, and are of a very good cut. It is evident they have had some intercourse with the Spaniards, from their having a very thin two-edged knife, which they place between their legs. Their buskins are made like those of the Indians of Chili. They pronounced some words which were either Spanish, or derived from that language. On pointing out the person who seemed to be their chief, they called him *Capitan*. When they wanted to smoke and asked for tobacco, they said *Chupan*.

They smoke in the same manner as the inhabitants of Chili, throwing out the smoke by their nostrils; and are extremely fond of a pipe. While they were smoking they cried *Buenos*, striking themselves upon the breast.

We gave them some new bread, and some sea-biscuit, which they eat with great appetite. The presents we made them consisted in some pounds of that red which we call vermilion: and some red woollen caps, which however not one of them could put his head into: these caps though very large for heads of a  
common

common size, were still too small for them. We also gave them some bedding, some hatchets, some kettles, and other utensils.

My brother put his pocket-handkerchief round the neck of the chief; who having accepted of it, immediately loosened his girth, made of straps twisted together like the girth of a saddle, having at each extremity a ball of stone half inclosed with leather. There was also another stone fixt to the middle of the belt, and a whetstone. He gave this belt to my brother, and fastened it round his waist, expressing much friendship for him. We gave them to understand we were going on much farther in the Streights, and they made us comprehend by signs, that they would go to bed as soon as the sun did, shewing us at the same time that they would lie down, and making a noise as if they were snoring in their sleep.

As soon as our boats had quitted them and got out to sea, they mounted on horseback, and directed their course towards the place to which we had made them understand we were going.

They seem to be crafty, bold people, being more inclined to receive than to give. They wrap themselves up in beasts skins sewed together, as the Spaniards do in their clokes. Our people killed some partridges; saw some wolves, foxes, and a great number of rats, but nothing curious.

On Thursday at noon we cast anchor under the low lands of Cape Gregory, in 25 fathoms of water.

After dinner we put our yawls to sea to go a fishing and shooting. They came back in the evening without having taken or killed any thing, excepting one mangy vicuna, which M. Gyraudais shot. There are numbers of vicunas in this country, which is very beautiful. Our people saw a great quantity of foxes, wolves, and rats, and met with some few thickets of yellow wood, but no water.

On Friday the ninth we set sail at day-break. At ten o'clock we got into the second narrows, and steered our course in order to pass between the islands of St. Elizabeth and St. Bartholomew. We afterwards anchored at 11 o'clock in the bay of Cape Noir,



its point bearing N. N. W. 5 degrees N. where the wood begins to appear.

In visiting the woods we found none but what was fit for fuel, and some yellow wood. The soil appears pretty good as well as the bay; into which we might have advanced much farther, the bottom being even: at 8 or 9 fathom of water, a fine sand, and muddy nearer the land. In this bay one may be under shelter from the N. N. E. by the W.

We took in fishing only one large *Cornet*, some *Gras-dos*, with a golden fish, which was a kind of smelt. Our shooting parties were much less fortunate. By the great quantity of bustard's excrement we found scattered about in the bushes, we imagined, that that bird must be very plentiful here in the season. There is no fresh water here; but there is a lake at the distance of a mile from the bottom of the bay.

On Saturday the 10th, at four in the morning, the sea running eastward, fell twelve fathoms perpendicular. This appears contrary to all my fore-mentioned observations; but it might proceed from some cross tide.

We continued along the coast of Patagonia, and found by our soundings the depth of water increase to 35 fathoms, muddy bottom, as we advanced towards the South. The coast is here also bordered with finer wood, which is found in greater quantities.

Having sailed seven leagues in this direction, we came to the opening of a small bay, where we met with a point, even with the surface of the water, and extending half a league out.

We had scarce sailed one quarter of a league, after finding no soundings with a hundred fathoms, when all at once we met with no more than seventeen fathoms depth of water, and a little farther on, only eight fathoms, then five, then four and a half, with a fine sandy muddy bottom. Soon after the depth increased to five and twenty fathoms. It is to be observed that it was high water. Perhaps the shallowest of these places would not have been covered at low water. There is no  
wood

wood upon this point, which is about seven leagues from Cape Noir; and the bank is one league South East of this point. This bank is not marked on the charts of the Streights; although it is very dangerous, being in the middle of the bay; which I imagine to be that called Freshwater, by its distance from Port Famine. There are two small rivers here, and some very fine wood; and it answers exactly the description given of it by the Englishman, who named it Freshwater bay.

We anchored soon after in Port Famine, which we sounded, and found it good in every part. One may coast St. Ann's point at two cables length without danger, if forced to it by the wind; the least depth of water there is five or six fathoms, which increases gradually to twenty-five at the distance of a quarter of a league: but one must not anchor here, because the bottom is rocky, and there is a strong current. At the South West of this point there is a bank one cable's length from land, which is not three feet under water at low tide.

When the wind will allow of it, it is better to keep out a full mile from St. Ann's point, on account of the current; and lest there should still be some lurking rocks under water, which may have escaped our notice: one may cast anchor in eight or ten fathoms water, rather towards St. Ann's point, than towards the South; for here the depth of the sea suddenly diminishes even at high water, as well as in the bottom, where, at low water, there appears a shallow, uncovered for more than a quarter of a league.

On Saturday the 17th, we sounded the small bays to the North of St. Ann's point, where we found some banks, extending far out.

On Sunday the 18th, we sent after dinner all our carpenters on shore, to cut some wood for burning and building; which was the reason of our being sent here, as well as to fetch away some trees for planting.

On Wednesday the 28th, M. de la Gyraudais being laden and ready, set sail at seven in the morning to return to the Malouine Islands.



On Friday the 30th, in the morning, I perceived some savages upon the sandy island, which forms the South entrance of the bay where we had left them the year before. I went to them, and knew them to be the same savages. They were two and twenty men, without women or boats. Having no presents to give them, and not being able to make them comprehend me, I embarked again.

On Sunday the 1st of June, early in the morning, the savages made some signs to us; but the bad weather prevented us from coming to them. They made us understand, that they wished we should get into the river with our yawl.

On the 2d, two of the savages appeared at the bottom of the bay, calling out to us in their language. I sent an officer in the yawl, to ask them if they would come on board. On the arrival of the yawl they fled towards the river beckoning us to follow them. The officer thought it more prudent not to do it, and came on board again. At eleven o'clock we saw them come out again in six canoes. They crossed the bay, passing within musket-shot of us, but would not come on board: they went and landed in a little creek under St. Ann's point. As I had put six men in this place to cut fire-wood, and the savages were very numerous, I immediately armed the yawl and the longboat, and went to meet them. At my arrival, some of them were employed in building their huts; others were fishing for shell-fish, muscles, patellæ, sea-urchins, crabs, bucinna, taking all these only from the rocks. Notwithstanding this they have nets made with cat-gut.

After having renewed the alliance made last year, I distributed presents among them, consisting in some pounds of vermilion, some woollen bed-cloaths, small looking-glasses, chalk, knives, some clokes, a hatchet, bread, &c. They would not taste any wine. I did not chuse to offer them brandy, lest their acceptance of it might be attended with dangerous consequences.

Their company appeared to consist of twenty-six men or boys, and forty women and girls, among whom were a great number of

of young people. The Chief of them is called Pacha-chui. He is distinguished from the rest by a cap of birds skins with the feathers on. When he receives any visits he puts it on his head, which is, no doubt, meant as a mark of his dignity. The presence of the men, who seemed excessively jealous, obliged the women to assume an appearance of great modesty.

I questioned the Chief as well as I could about his religion. He gave me to understand, at least I thought I comprehended by his signs, that they neither worship the sun, moon, men, nor animals, but only the heavens or the whole universe; this he repeated several times, always lifting up his hands joined together over his head.

During this time they continued throwing upon the fire, without any ceremony, all the wood cut down by our people. This obliged me to send my six men to cut wood at a greater distance from these savages, to avoid quarrelling with them.

They exchanged with our people some bows and arrows, and some necklaces of shells in return for cloaths. I then left them, and invited them to come on board. Four of them accepted my invitation. I made them dine with me, and entertained them in the best manner I could. They preferred bacon to every thing else. Their desert was a candle to each, which they devoured with great eagerness. When dinner was over, I had them dressed from head to foot, and gave them some trifles with which they appeared very much pleased; and then sent them to land.

In the afternoon I returned to the huts of the savages. The Pacha-chui came to meet me, and made me a present of a kind of flint to strike fire, like those which are found in Canada, appearing to be a marcasite of yellow copper. He afterwards distributed the presents I had made them in the morning.

One of them was continually muttering; I asked him the reason of this. He gave me to understand that he was saying his prayers, by pointing up to the heavens as the Pacha-chui had done in the morning. This seemed to imply that they wor-  
shipped



shipped some divinity, but I could not comprehend what the divinity was, nor under what title he was adored.

Both men and women have no other dress than the skins of sea-wolves, vicunas, guanacoes, otters, and lynxes, which they throw on their shoulders. Most of them are bare-headed. A bird's skin with the feathers on, covers their private parts. The men call themselves *Pach-pachevé*; the women *Cap-cap*. They taught me these names by shewing me first their persons, and afterwards the parts which distinguish the sex. Both men and women are thin. Their canoes are ill-built, in comparison with those of the savages of Canada. The women are the persons employed in rowing and fishing. They have a number of dogs, resembling foxes; which they call *Ouchi*; and their canoes, *Sborou*.

It is to be observed, that the morning tides are always equal every morning; rise very little in open sea, and are only as the neap-tides.

On Wednesday morning the 4th, the savages made no scruple of burning five or six cords of wood, which our people had cut down, but they assisted in bringing the rest on board.

At noon the Pacha-chui came on board our frigate, attended by eleven men. I made him dine with me, and gave the others some biscuit, and a piece of tallow; and for their drink three pints of the oil of sea-wolves. They ate and drank all up with a most excellent appetite. I afterwards dressed the Pacha-chui, and giving some trifles to the others, sent them all on shore.

On the 6th, all the savages, pleased with the reception I had given their comrades, came in four canoes to pay me a visit. But as they had large fires in their canoes, I would not suffer them to come on board, at which they seemed displeased. I ordered them some biscuit and oil; and after dinner sent them back without giving them any reason for it.

On Sunday the 8th, the savages began to be troublesome: they stole several hatchets, some provisions, and cloaths from us. As they seemed inclinable to theft and fraud, I took the reso-

lution to let nobody lie on shore, and to submit to the inconvenience of having all the utensils and tools brought back every night.

On Monday the 9th, the savages stole again some harpoons, hatchets, iron-wedges, and mauls. I complained of this to the Pacha-chui, and desired our tools might be returned, but to no purpose. I then gave them to understand, that if they persisted in these practices, we should treat them in a different manner.

Their boat, which had crossed the bay last night, now brought them a dying man, about forty years of age, who was exceedingly emaciated.

In the afternoon, our wood-cutters represented to me, that they lost a great deal of time in coming back to lie on board, and then returning in the morning to the wood: they therefore asked leave to lie on shore. I consented to this, desiring them at the same time, to treat the savages mildly if they came to visit them.

For this purpose, I placed a discreet person at the head of them, and with him his brother, a man of a mild disposition, and who, from being used to live among the savages of Canada, was in some measure acquainted with their manners: and after recommending it to them to keep a strict watch lest they should be surprized, I returned to the ship.

On Thursday the 12th, about four o'clock in the morning, we heard some noise among the savages. Three of their canoes, with a great number of women in them and some men, came up to our frigate. I gave them some pieces of bread, and some oil of sea-wolves, the greatest part of which they put into a kind of bladder they had brought on purpose, and drank off the rest. I would not suffer them to come on board, on account of their being so much addicted to theft, and because they had got large fires in their canoes. This day I observed, contrary to the common custom, that the men were not painted: only some few of them were painted black, which gave them a very frightful appearance. The women were all spotted with black, having their faces and necks bloody, as if they had scratched themselves



with thorns. Two of their canoes doubled St. Ann's point going to the North.

On Sunday the 15th, in the morning, I went to pay a visit to the savages. Not seeing the sick man, I asked them what was become of him; they made me comprehend he was dead. The cries we had heard on Thursday morning were probably the marks of their mourning. They seemed all very much afflicted, and were all painted black, contrary to the usual custom; and the women appeared scratched all over, as if they had been torn with pins. I observed that they shewed much regret for the dead man. I asked them by signs what they had done with him. They answered me only by lifting up their hands to heaven, repeating the same signs several times, in order I suppose to make me understand the deceased was there: from whence it may be conjectured that they believe in a future state. They would never tell me what they had done with the dead body. I am inclined to think they had transported it in one of their canoes, with which they had doubled St. Ann's point. I distributed some biscuit and oil of sea-wolves among them.

On Monday the 16th, I perceived two canoes of savages coming towards us, and all the rest going out of the bay. I put myself into our yawl, taking some bread and oil along with me. When I came near them, I made them a sign to follow me to land which they did very readily. I gave them the bread and oil. They broke up their camp, and those who staid behind were gathering up the remains of it. They made me understand that they were going to live at the distance of a league from that place, in one of the small bays to the North of St. Ann's point, because the shell-fish became scarce in the place where they were. The Pacha-chui was in one of the two boats, and was coming with an intention to thank me, and to apprize me of his departure.

I then ventured to ask him, if any of his young people would come away with us, making him understand as well as I could, that I would bring him back in a twelvemonth. He answered  
by

by signs that he consented, and immediately presented one of them to me, who seemed satisfied. We then left each other, and I brought away my young savage with me, to put him on board. I dressed him, and entertained him as well as I could. The Chief went out of the bay to join his troop.

On Tuesday the 17th our savage seemed to be pleased with us; and even looked contented and chearful. About ten o'clock, seventeen savages coming by land from a small bay which lay North of us, and where they were encamped, paid a visit to their companion. We went to meet them, taking him along with us; and I gave them some bread and oil for their breakfast. As we were going back, another of them asked leave to come on board to stay with his comrade. As the offer was voluntary I took him along with me.

Towards six o'clock in the evening, I perceived that our two savages were so melancholy as even to shed tears, and that they were constantly looking towards land. I was not at a loss to find out the cause of this uneasiness; and thought it natural that they must on reflection regret the resolution they had taken. Notwithstanding my desire of bringing them away, in hopes that I might afterwards receive some useful information from them, I determined to send them back, and restore them to that liberty which they certainly imagined they had lost. I made them get into our yawl, and had them conducted back to land. They expressed much joy when they came on shore, and desired they might go to their families.

On Wednesday, at 9 o'clock, they came to ask for some bread and oil. I ordered some to be distributed to them, and having assisted in loading our longboat, they went back to their first encampment. At four o'clock in the afternoon they left us, making me understand that they were going to rest, because the moon, which they call *Sercon* was up; but that they would come back, and bring with them the two young men who had been on board of us. When we got back to our ship, we heard two guns fire; the signal agreed upon between us to call for help, in case



case we should be attacked by the savages. I then suspected that our people were engaged with them. I immediately had our boats armed, and sent them to their assistance, but it was too late: the victory was already gained, and the savages routed when we landed. The affair happened in the following manner:

Twenty, or six and twenty savages, as we were told, came down secretly and silently through the wood behind the workshop; and three of them entered suddenly into the hut where our people were, who thinking that the savages seemed to have some mischievous design, placed themselves at the entrance of the hut to hinder the rest from coming in. They then attempted to force their way, and not succeeding fell upon our men, some attempting to seize their legs, in order to throw them down, and probably to bind them, being provided with large straps in form of slings, having at the end a dart about six inches long, made of a jagged bone; the rest beat them with large sticks. Our people, though they were surprized at so sudden a declaration of war, were not discouraged. They seized their cutlasses, and exerted themselves bravely against their enemies, destroying as many of them as they could; by which means they threw the savages into confusion and routed them: our people however were but seven against twenty-five: three savages remained dead upon the field of battle, exclusive of the wounded; three of our people were wounded; the master carpenter received several blows upon the head with a stick; another was dangerously wounded in the head with a cutlass; and his brother was cut on the hand with the same instrument, which has quite disabled him. The wounded were dressed as soon as they came on board. One of the three was afterwards trepanned.

On Friday the 20th, in the morning, I sent the longboat to fetch away the timber, and to bury the three savages in the same grave. After having raised the ground to a certain height, we placed their skins or cloaks, with their shoes on the top, that the other savages might find out the place where their dead companions lay; and that they should not think we had eaten them; which

which perhaps they might do, if they were unable to find the dead bodies.

On Sunday the 22<sup>d</sup>, we were at the entrance of the narrows; and at eleven o'clock we saw several fires on the low lands of Cape Gregory. In coasting these, we discovered about 90 or 100 men, most of them on horseback, who followed us to the place of anchorage; thinking, without doubt, that we should anchor there. But I was prevented by the wind blowing fresh, and the weather being favourable for sailing out of the Streights. We made twelve leagues since morning, the savages making signs to us all the while. At nine o'clock in the evening we cleared Cape Virgin, and left the Streights.

---

*Remarks made in 1766 in the Streights of Magellan, from Cape Virgin to Cape Rond; by M. de la Gyraudais, Lieutenant of a Frigate, at present Captain of a fire-ship.*

CAPE Virgin is of the same height as Cape Fréhel, in the road of St. Malo, and has the same form. At two leagues and a half westward, it sends forth a low point, which extends a league out at sea to the South, with a ridge of rocks, which is covered by the tide at two cables length from this point; and against which the sea breaks with great violence. This ridge is not marked upon the chart of the Streights, any more than a bay in which we anchored. The coast is rather high and sound, from Cape Virgin to Cape Possession. One may sail along it at the distance of half a league without any danger. Possession bay is large. It shelters ships from the wind, from the W. S. W. to the N. E. passing by the N. It may easily be known by M. de Gennes' plan, which is accurate in the distances, and the bearing of the lands; except with regard to Lion's island, which he does not place sufficiently to the W. S. W. by one league and a half at least. Over Possession bay, there is a large cape, and  
to



to the S. W. of this, four small hummocks situated near each other.

From this bay till one gets beyond the first narrows, the coast is low and found on the starboard side going in. After this comes the bay Boucaut, formed by the first narrows, and Cape Gregory which is pretty high. Two leagues in land there is a mountain, running N. E. and S. W. and a very high even land, which is seen a long while before one enters the first narrows.

After passing the second narrows, the land rises, and there are several hollows from this to St. Elizabeth's island; and from thence to the main land, which must be coasted as near as possible, particularly on the flood; because the tide throws with prodigious force against St. Bartholomew's island. The passage is between these two islands to Cape Noir, which is high; and where there is very convenient and good anchorage, called by M. de Gennes, Freshwater, though it is not so. Here we begin to find wood. Freshwater is six leagues beyond, in a creek, the starboard point of which is very low, and where there is no wood. Here in sounding across we had no ground at fifty fathoms. Two minutes after we saw the bottom, and at four fathoms fine grey sand. We followed this bottom a quarter of a league farther, taking care to keep rather wide of it. I would advise not to go nearer to it than the distance of two leagues. From thence to Port Famine the land is high, as it is also to the bay of Cape Rond.

*Observations on the Terra del Fuego side, from the entrance of the Straights.*

FROM the side of Cape Virgin, to two leagues and a half within, the land is high and found. Here there is a very low point, extending one league out at sea S. E. and N. W. To the N. and S. of this point, and one league wide of it, is a shoal bottom:

bottom. The coast afterwards forms a hollow, not to be seen but in fine weather, as far as Cape Orange, which makes the entrance on the larboard side of the first narrows. Here is a ridge of rocks which covers at high water, and extends N. E. S. W. to the distance of two long leagues from this cape. From hence to the side of the second narrows, the land forms another hollow; and from the second narrows to the side of Cape Rond, the land is very high, and forms an appearance of four hills. Between these possibly there may be some bays. M. de Gennes has not marked the two low points of land, placed before, and on this side of Cape Rond, at one league and a half or two leagues distance.

---

*Extract of the Journal of the same M. de la Gyraudais commanding his Majesty's Pink, l'Etoile, going from the Malouine Islands to the Streights of Magellan.*

**I** Believe there is a greater distance between the Malouine Islands and the main land of Patagonia, than is marked upon the charts; for the Eagle found herself by her reckoning eighteen leagues ahead of the ship, as well in going as in coming back. We sounded frequently, and found sixty fathoms, mixed bottom, with white coral, and a gun flint, which was remarkable enough. Here we saw several whales, some sea-larks, larger than common, some pinguins, divers, petterils, ospreys, and large gulls.

From the twentieth to the first of May we had thick weather, which hindered us from seeing land, when we were more than half a league distance from it: the sea seemed agitated as if we had been in a race. The water was here discoloured at eight leagues from the shore, but more so at the mouth of the Streights. At ten, the weather clearing up, we saw land, distance four  
R r leagues.



leagues. By our reckoning we still found the Malouine Islands farther off from the main land, than is laid down by our charts.

On the fifth instant, about four in the afternoon, we saw a fire on the coast of Patagonia. Upon coming nearer, we saw seven men with their horses. We could not discern whether they were naked or clothed. When they perceived that we had got beyond the place where they had made their fires, they followed along the coast, mounted upon their horses, and dogs after them. Seeing that we continued our course, they shouted, but we could not comprehend their meaning. The wind and tide being in our favour, we lost sight of the Patagonians and passed the first narrows. It was a league and a half over. Between five and six we anchored in the bay Boucaut, at three leagues from Cape Gregory, with ten fathoms water, muddy bottom of sand and small shells, at the distance of a full league from the land. One should not cast anchor in lesser depth of water; for the sea fell three or four fathoms in the night-time. The coast is well laid down in M. de Gennes' plan.

From the 6th to the 7th, in the night, we again saw fires on the Patagonian coast. At eight o'clock this fire was of one side of us, and we distinguished some Patagonians on shore, by means of our spying glasses. The Eagle and myself put out our yawls to sea, and sent them with fifteen men well armed, including the officer, to the spot where we saw seven of the savages. They paid our people some compliment in their own language. Our seamen could not understand them; but imagined their faces and behaviour expressed a satisfaction at seeing us. After the first compliments, they conducted our people to their fires.

Here they examined the Patagonians at their leisure, and found them to be men of the highest stature: the least of them was five feet seven inches (*French measure*), and of a bulk beyond the proportion of their height, which made them appear less tall than they are. They have large strong limbs, and broad faces; their complexion is extremely tanned, their forehead high, their

their nose flat and broad ; their cheeks are full, and their mouth large ; their teeth are very white, and well ranged, and their hair black. They are stronger than our Europeans of the same size.

The words they pronounced were, *Echoura, Chaoa, Didon, abi, abi, obi, Choven, Quécalle, Machan, Naticon, Pito*. These were the only words our people could gather, while they were warming themselves at their fires.

M. de St. Simon, an officer, who by order of the ministry embarked with us for the Malouine Islands with presents for the natives, acquitted himself extremely well of his commission. He gave them some harpoons, bludgeons, bedding, woollen caps, vermilion, and in short every thing he thought would be most agreeable to them. They appeared very well pleased.

They are clothed with the skins of guanacos, vicunas, and other animals, sewed together in form of square clokes which reach below the calf of the leg almost to the ankle. They have a sort of buskins or half-boots, made of the same skins, with the shag on the inside, as it is also in their clokes, which are very well sewed together in regular compartments, and painted on the outside with blue and red figures, bearing a resemblance to Chinese characters. The figures however are almost all alike, and divided by straight lines which form sorts of squares and lozenges \*. They have something like hats ornamented with feathers, much in the same manner as ours. Some of these hats resemble very much the Spanish caps.

Several of our people went a shooting at some distance, where they killed a few partridges, and saw some carcases of vicunas.

R r 2

The

\* M. de la Gyraudais received as a present from these Patagonians, when he visited them at his return to the Malouine Islands, several of their clokes, some of their weapons, some slings armed with stones, and some necklaces of shells from their women. He brought them to Paris, and gave part of them to M. d'Arboulins, who had some of them presented to the King, and kept the rest. I examined them at leisure, and although I am rather more than five feet seven inches (French measure) one of these clokes thrown on my shoulders, (as the Patagonians wear them) trailed on the ground at least a foot and a half.



The country they went over is uncultivated, barren, and dry. There is nothing but heath upon it, and very little grass. The horses of the savages seem to be very bad, but they manage them with great dexterity. The Patagonians made some presents to our people who were returned from shooting. These were round stones, of the size of a two-pounder ball. They are placed in a strap of leather, fastened and sewed to the end of a string of catgut twisted like a rope. It is a kind of a sling, which they use very dexterously for killing animals a hunting. On the end, opposite to that which fixes the round stone, there is another stone placed, half the size of the former, and closely covered all over with a kind of bladder. They hold the small stone in their hand after having passed the cord between their fingers; and then making a turn with the arm, as in casting a sling, they throw the weapon at the animal, whom they can reach, and kill at the distance of four hundred feet.

The complexion of the women is tolerably clear, for they are much less tanned than the men, yet they are proportioned to them in size. They are also dressed in a cloke, wear buskins, and a kind of small apron, which only hangs down half the length of their thighs. They certainly pluck out their eyebrows for they have none. Their hair is dressed in front, and they have no hats.

These Patagonians are ignorant of the passion of jealousy, at least there is reason to think so, from their encouraging our people to handle the breasts of their wives and daughters, and making them lie promiscuously with them, when I paid them a visit on my return to the Malouine Islands.

We gave them bread which they ate, and some tobacco for chewing and smoking. By their manner of using it, we saw plainly it was no novelty to them. They would not drink any wine. When we had been five or six hours with them, they grew more familiarized. They were very curious, searched our pockets, were very desirous of seeing every thing, and examined us with attention from head to foot.

We

We mounted their horses, which were equipped with bridle, saddle and stirrups. They use both whip and spurs; and seemed satisfied and well pleased to see our people ride their horses. When I had a gun fired for signal to bring our people back, they shewed not the least emotion or surprise. When we went away they entreated us much to stay with them, giving us to understand by signs, that they would supply us with food, and though they had nothing to offer us at present, yet they soon expected some of their people to return from sporting. We answered them also by signs that we could not possibly stay; and that we were going directly to a certain place, which we attempted to point out to them, endeavouring at the same time to make them comprehend that we wished them to bring us some oxen and horses. We know not whether they understood us.

On the eighth, having set sail from Bay Boucaut, and anchored under Cape Gregory, we went a shooting on shore, and the soil appeared the same as on the last spot. After we had walked about a league, we met with two herds of vicunas, each consisting of three or four hundred; of which we could not kill more than one with a musket charged with ball. I also shot a *Stink-bingsem*, which I left on account of its offensive smell. I likewise fired at a wolf, but all these animals are very wild, and will not suffer any one to approach them.

At half past six in the morning of the ninth, we got under sail in very pleasant weather. M. de Gennes in his draught lays down the second narrows East and West corrected by the globe; but he has marked it two points too much to the West. I would advise to keep the Patagonian shore till you come to the North and South of Elizabeth's island; on account of the strong tide which runs upon St. Bartholomew and Lyon islands, and upon some shoals lying off those islands. We coasted close to Elizabeth's island, till we came to Cape Noir, where we anchored in eight fathoms water, sandy and muddy bottom, with broken shells.

From



From Friday the ninth to the tenth, we kept along the Patagonian shore, at the distance of a league and an half. The coast appeared woody, but on the return of our boat we were told the wood was not good for much. Being near a low point we sounded, and no ground at fifty fathoms. An instant after we saw the bottom, which was sandy, and at four fathoms water; this obliged us to haul off.

From the 10th to the 11th we had much wind, and foggy weather, with a very rough sea. As we were no more than five leagues from Port Famine, I determined to go and anchor there. The Eagle followed us, and we soon had reason to be pleased with this resolution, for a quarter of an hour after we came to anchor, we could not discern any object at the distance of half a cannon-shot from us, and the wind still continued blowing very hard.

From the 11th to the 12th, the fog and rainy weather continued. Having walked round the bay, we met with some fine wood, and discovered a very rapid river, on the larboard point of the mouth of the bay. This stream makes the sea as dirty and as turbid, as a river overflowing from abundance of rains.

On the water-side there were seven or eight huts belonging to the savages, which they had but lately quitted. I fired a gun, and hoisted our flag, in order to attract the savages from the neighbouring parts.

From the 13th to the 14th there was a high wind, followed by a prodigious violent storm, which ended in a great fall of rain, succeeded by snow and hail, which lasted till noon, when the weather grew calm.

From the 16th to the 17th, we met with some very fine wood, and sent an officer and thirty men on shore, to pitch a tent, and cut roads through the woods. We were constantly employed in cutting and shipping our wood till the 17th, when we unmoored, leaving the Eagle to complete her cargo, and bring up ours to the Malouine Islands.

From the 29th to the 30th, at ten in the morning, we saw a fire on shore, which the savages had kindled on our account. We steered towards the fire, and saw some men and horses.

From the 30th to the 31st, the night coming upon us un-awares, we came to our anchorage by the light of two fires which the savages had made for us, one upon a mountain, the other upon the sea-side. We anchored in nineteen fathoms, black muddy bottom, with small shells.

At day-break the savages shouted, in order that we should come to them. I put my yawl and longboat to sea well armed, and with presents. I went on shore, where I found three hundred savages, including men, women, and children. Not expecting to meet with so many, I was obliged to go on board again to fetch some more presents.

From the 31st to Sunday the first of June 1766, the wind having driven our yawl from shore, which was empty, our people were under some anxiety for fear of losing it. The savages perceiving this, one of them who was on horseback, spurred his horse, and plunged with him into the sea, to swim after the yawl. He got hold of it, and brought it back to our seamen. Perhaps we who pique ourselves so much upon our politeness, affability, and humanity, and who call these Patagonians savages, would hardly have done so much for them, in a similar circumstance.

At seven in the morning the longboat went to shore with the rest of the presents, which the stormy weather had prevented us sending sooner. It came back with thirteen of our people who had stayed with the savages since yesterday morning. They told us that these Patagonian giants had treated them with the utmost civility according to their manner, and given them marks of the sincerest friendship, even so far as to invite them to lie with their wives and daughters; that they had given them some flesh of the guanacos, several of their clokes, and some of their slings; and the women some of their necklaces made of shells.

They



They also made me a present of twelve horses ; which I could not keep for want of forage.

The piece of civility most troublesome to our folks, was that of being obliged to lie promiscuously among the Patagonians ; who often lay three or four together upon one of our people, to keep the cold from them ; so that their muskets and other arms became useless. They would therefore have had no resource left but in their pocket-knives, which would not have been of much service for defending them, in case of necessity against five or six hundred men, including women and children, and all of them proportionally of an enormous stature, both in height and bulk. Each man or woman, had one or two dogs, and as many horses. They seemed to be of a mild disposition, and very humane. It would be easy to establish a very profitable trade with them, for their horses, and for the skins of vicunas, which are so much valued, and bear so high a price in Europe. The skins of guanacos are also excellent, though not so fine.

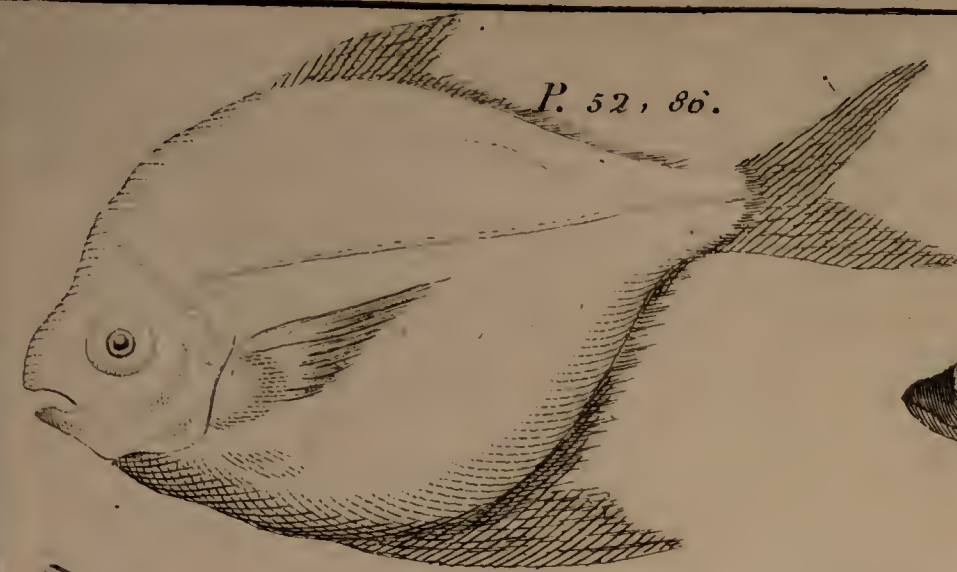
From the 7th to the 8th, a very high wind, rainy and thick weather. The sea was terrible, the wind blowing always by squalls.

From Sunday the 8th to the 9th, the sea was very rough, with rain, hail, snow, and fogs. At nine we saw land without knowing what it was : at noon we found it to be Sebald de Wertz islands, which bore S. E. distance ten leagues.

On the 15th we cast anchor in Acarron bay, in the same place from whence we set out.

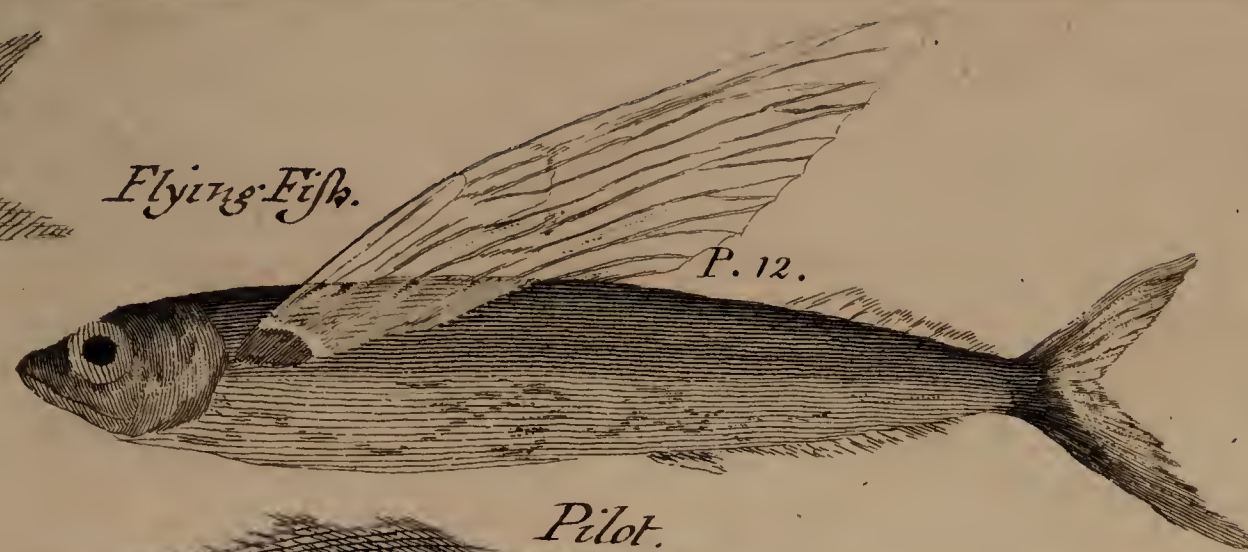
F I N I S.





P. 52, 86.

*Flying Fish.*



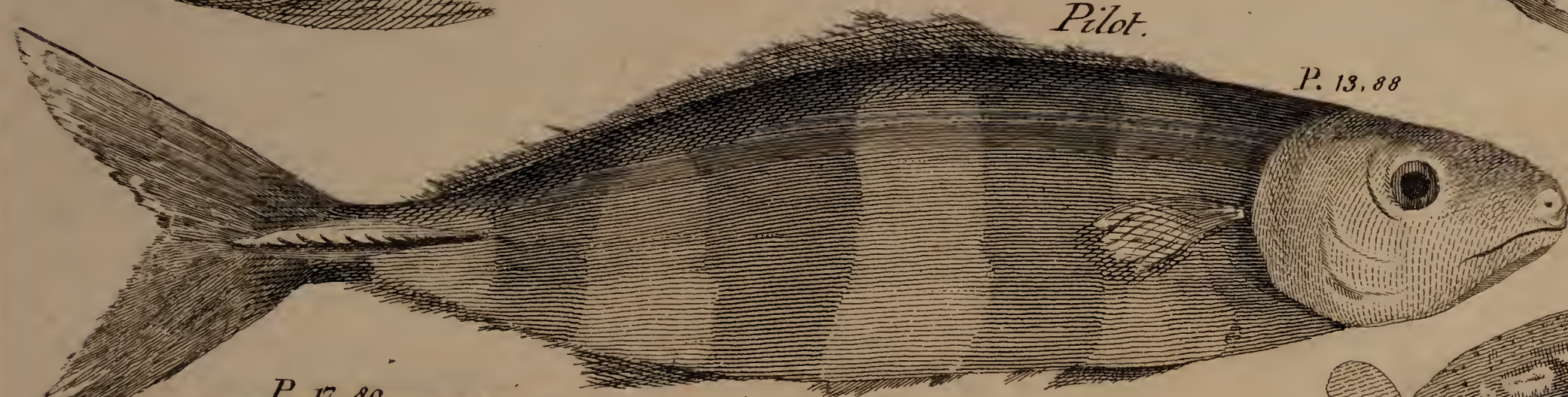
P. 12.

*Pilot.*

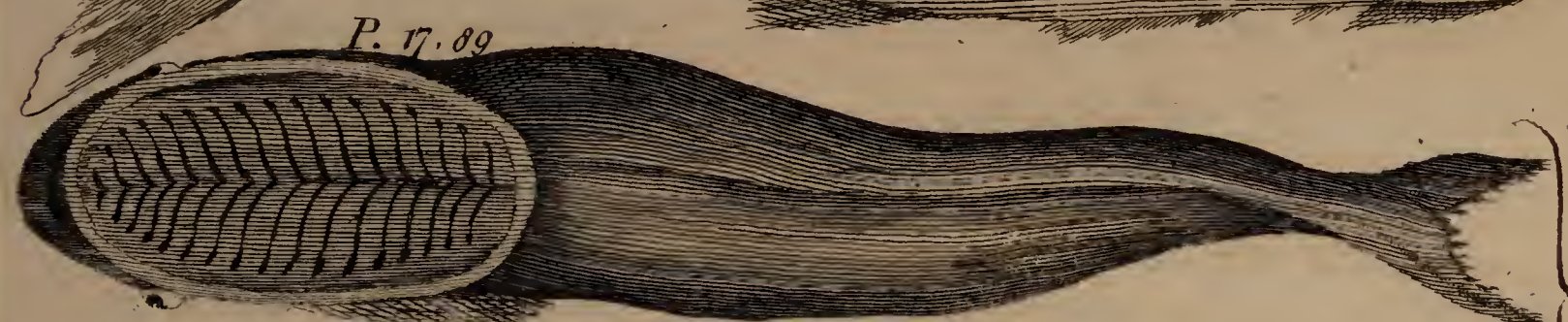


P. 34.

*Porpoise.*



P. 13, 88



P. 17, 89

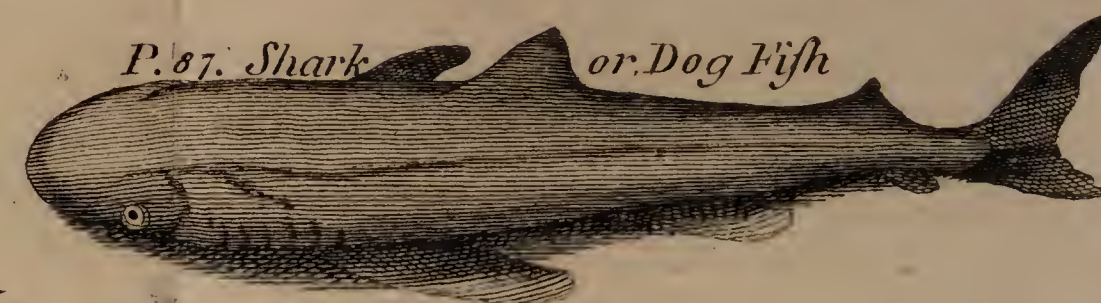
*Sucking Fish.*



P. 17, 89

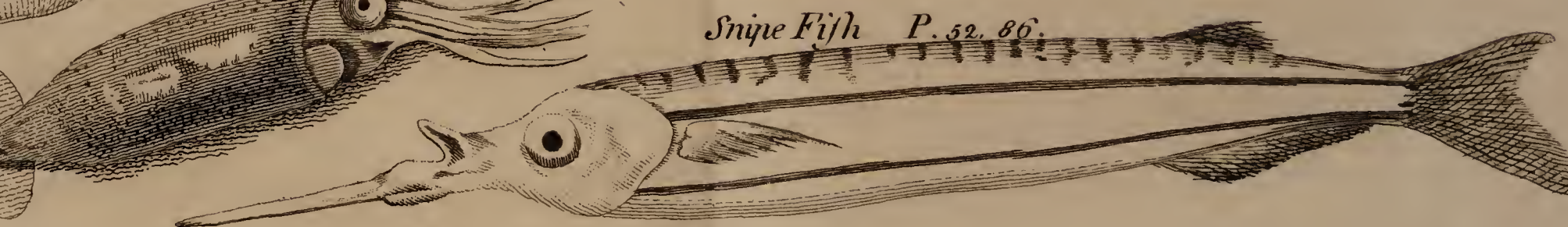


P. 252. Cornat

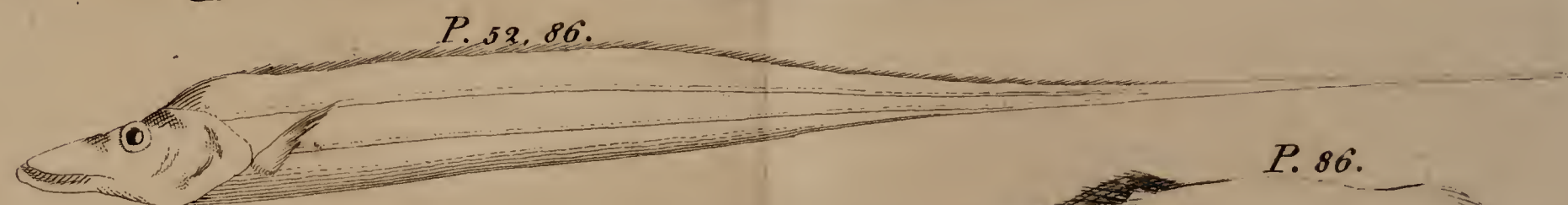


P. 87. Shark

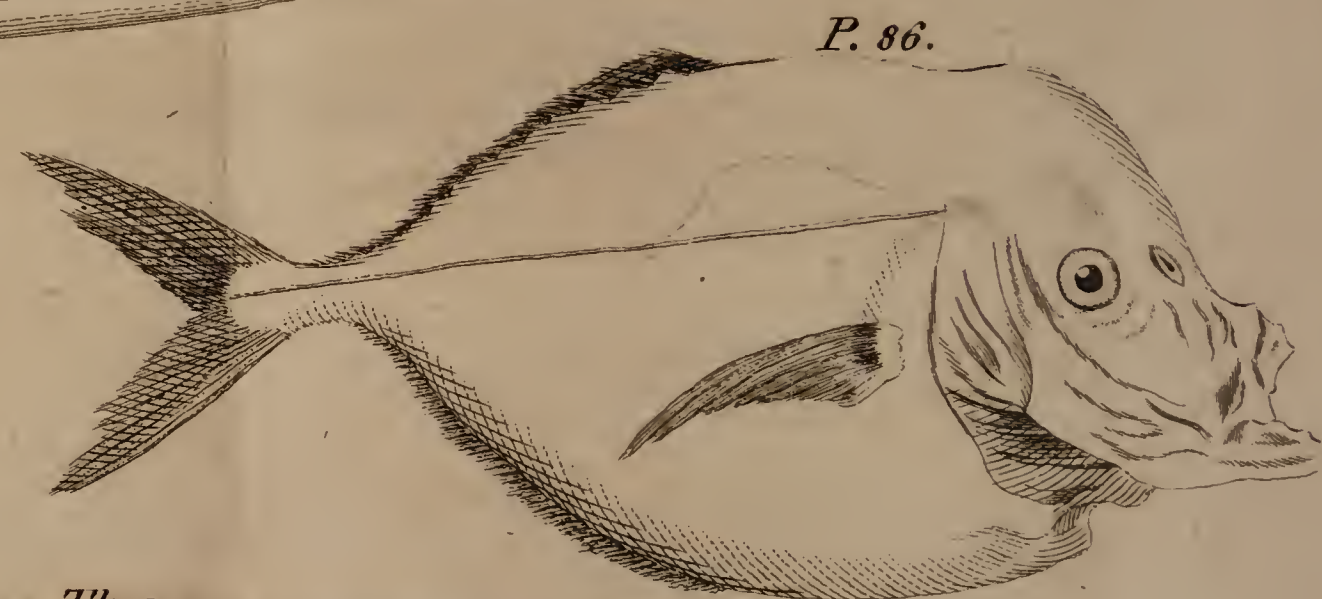
*or. Dog Fish*



*Snake Fish* P. 52, 86.



P. 52, 86.

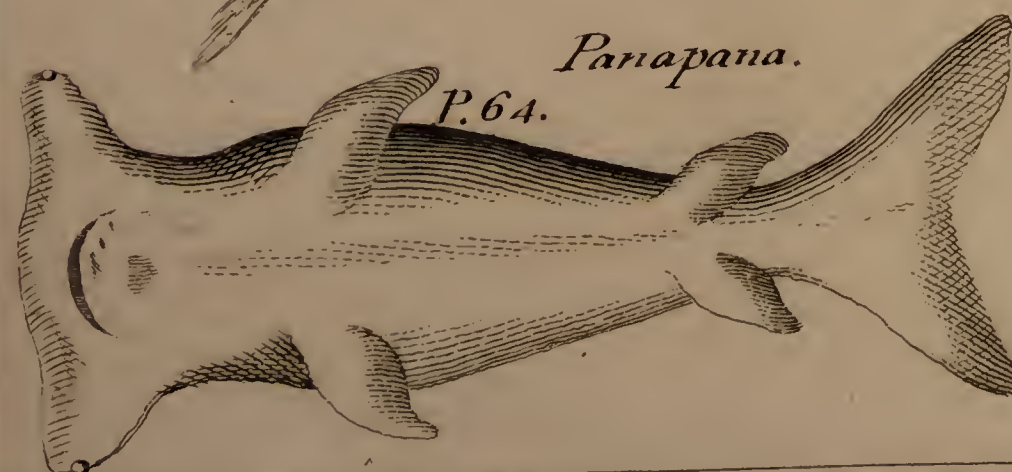


P. 86.



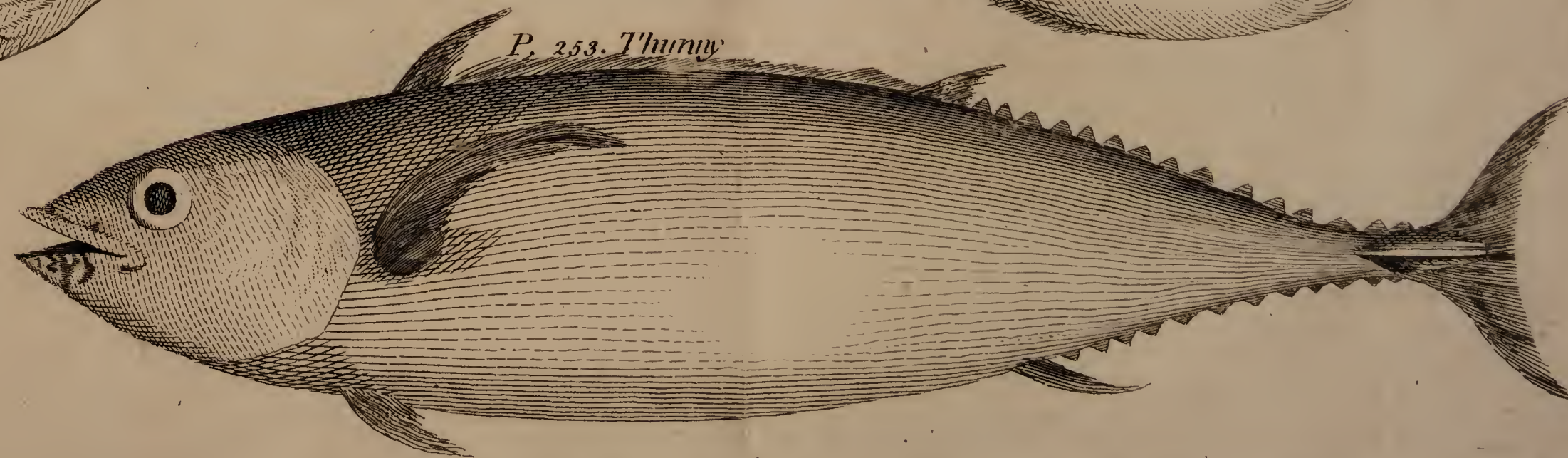
*Bonito*

P. 254.



*Panapana.*

P. 64.



P. 253. Thunny







*Tropical Bird.*

P. 19. 36.

*Spoon-bill.*

P. 55.

*P. 60. Maracaja.*

*Humming Bird.*

P. 56.

*Titi.*

P. 64.

*Pinguin*

P. 244.

P. 244.

P. 173.

P. 246.

*Head of the Quebranta Huesos or Osprey*

P. 101, 214.

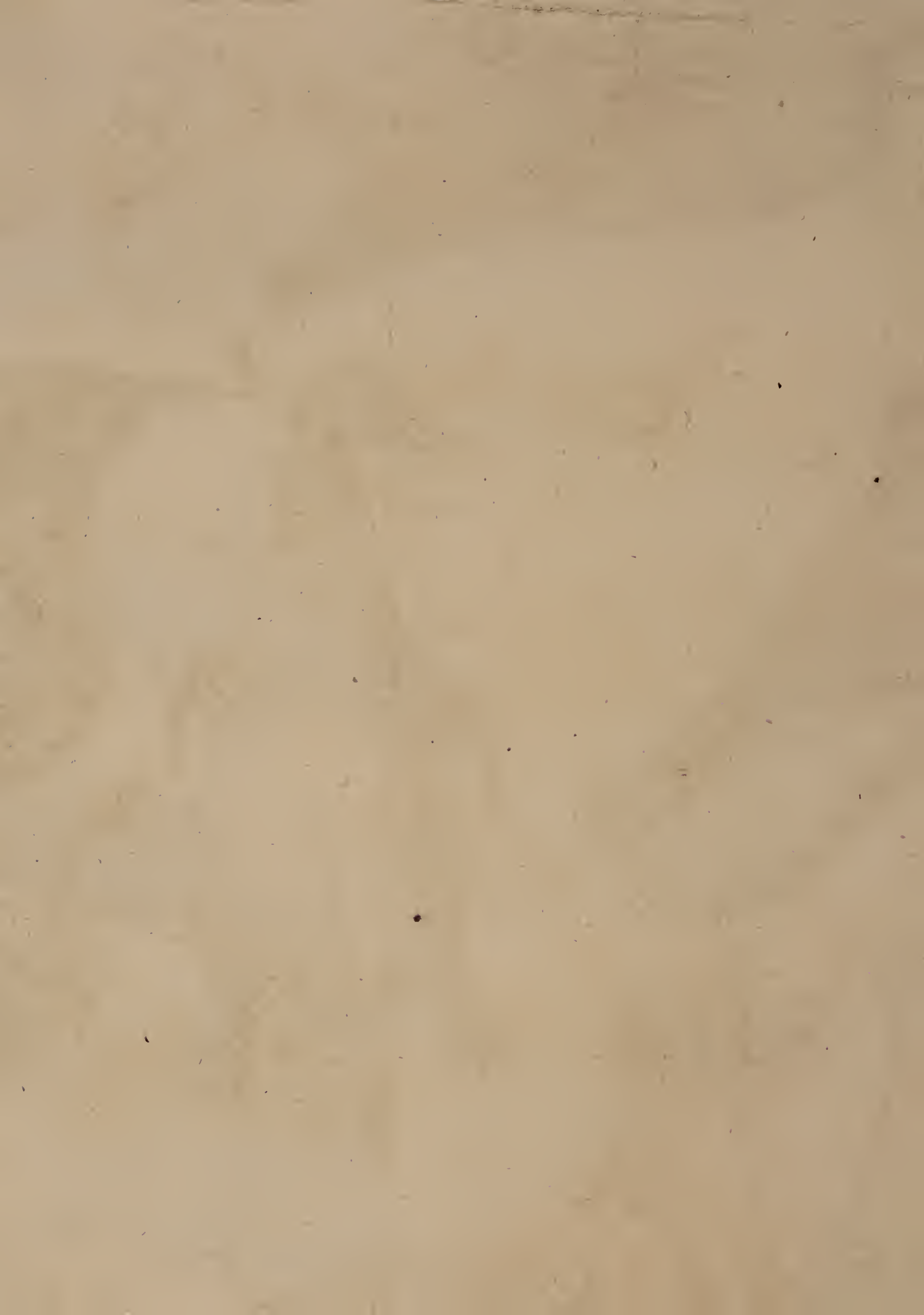
P. 230.

P. 233.

P. 184.

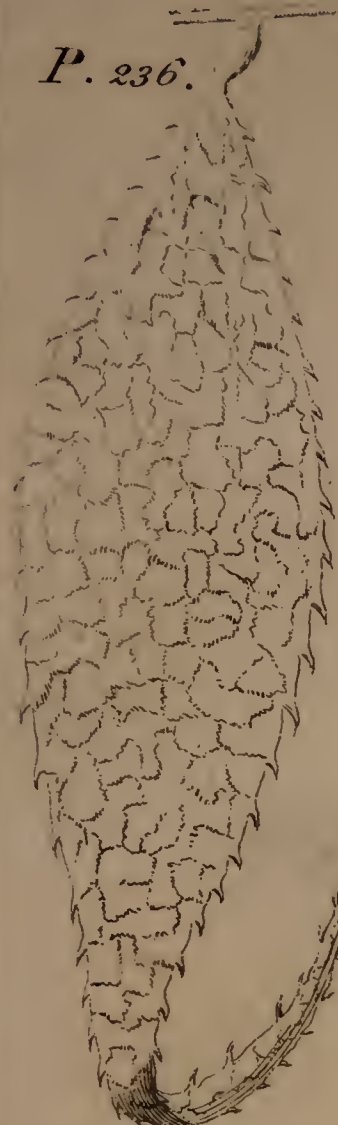
P. 184.







P. 236.



Sea Wolf P. 188.



Sea Wolf P. 188, 202



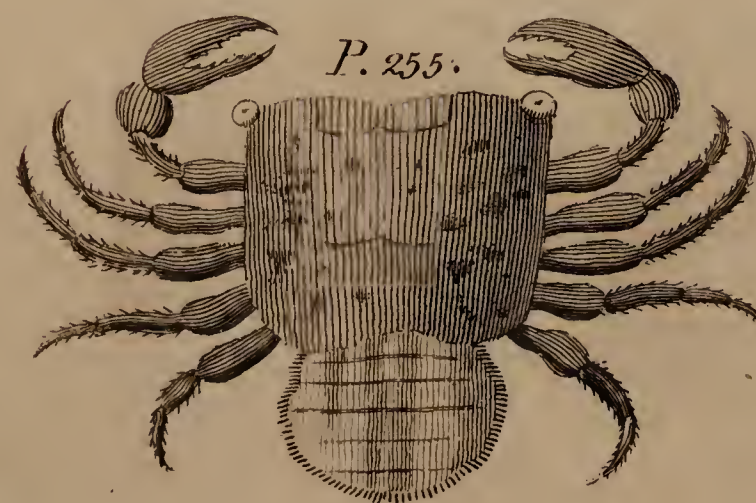
P. 240.



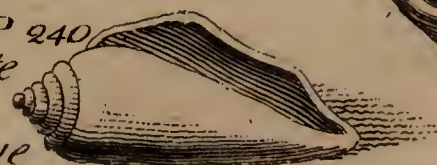
P. 230.



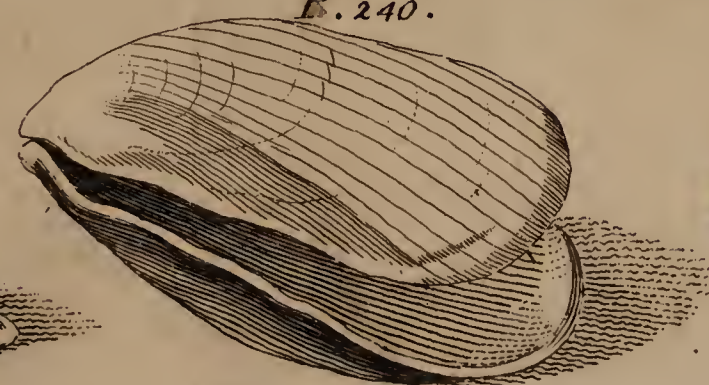
P. 255.



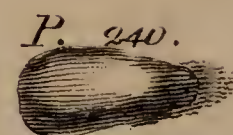
P. 240.  
Concha Poulette  
or  
Gueulle de Raye



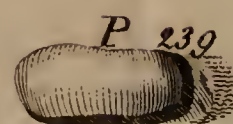
P. 240.



P. 240.



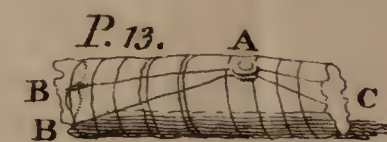
P. 239



P. 13



P. 13.







## ADVERTISEMENT to the READER.

**T**HE Editor thinks it necessary to acquaint the Reader, that, in this translation of Dom Pernety's Journal, nothing has been omitted, but the detail of ordinary occurrences, which appeared common to every voyage. Whatever seemed in any view peculiar to this expedition has been retained.

In respect to the cuts and plans, some alterations and additions have been made. A general chart shewing the situation of Falkland's Islands in the Southern Ocean, which was not given in the original, is here inserted. Plans of the islands of St. Catherine, and of Buenos Ayres, are also added. The birds, fish, &c. are classed in their proper order, and placed at the end of the book with references to the page in which they are mentioned.

The Editor hopes the work will meet with the approbation of the public, as he has spared neither cost nor pains to make it useful and exact.



## Note of the Translator omitted in page 242.

The Pinguin here mentioned, is different from that which is described by our ingenious countryman Mr. Pennant, under the name of the Patagonian Pinguin; and answers more exactly to the second species or lesser Pinguin spoken of by that gentleman, and which is otherwise called, *Anser Magellanicus Clusii*, &c. It is probable that Don Pernety never saw the Patagonian Pinguin, since he says nothing of it. The Reader will find an accurate account of the different species of this singular bird, in the 58th volume of the *Philosophical Transactions*, which contains Mr. Pennant's paper on that subject.

---

## Directions to the Book Binder for placing the PLATES.

	Page
1. The general Chart to front the Title.	-
2. St. Catherines Island, &c.	41
3. Rio de la Plata	101
4. Plan of Montevideo	139
5. Spaniards at Montevideo	142
6. Spanish Lady of Montevideo	143
7. A Spaniard of Montevideo	144
8. A Spanish Gentleman of Montevideo	145
9. An Indian of Montevideo	163
10. Malouine or Falkland Islands	177
11. Plan and View of Acarron Bay	189
12. Streights of Magellan	263
13. The Patagonians	273
14. Fishes found in this Voyage	} at the End of the Book.
15. Birds, ditto	
16. Sea Lyons, &c.	

Spots on of both by *Microspora*  
long hair 2.

Antennae 164.

Petioles 279, 288, 292, 294.

Spine to incision 290.





